

RAISING FREE CHILDREN

Breaking the Generational Cycle of Co-Dependency

Introduction: The Legacy You're Choosing to Leave

You've done the hard work. You've sat in therapy, worked through the books, faced the painful truths about your own upbringing. You've learned to recognize when you're people-pleasing, when you're over-functioning, when you're taking responsibility for someone else's emotions. You've begun setting boundaries—awkwardly at first, but with growing confidence. You're healing.

And then you watch your seven-year-old apologize profusely for spilling her milk, or you notice your teenager seems terrified to disappoint you, or you catch yourself about to say, "It's okay, Mommy's not mad" when actually, you *are* frustrated—and a cold realization washes over you:

What if I'm already passing this on?

This fear—this awareness—is both your burden and your gift. It means you're awake. It means you have the chance to do what wasn't done for you: to interrupt the cycle before it calcifies in another generation.

But here's what no one tells you when you're in the thick of your own recovery: knowing what *not* to do doesn't automatically teach you what *to* do. You know you don't want your children to grow up believing they're responsible for other people's feelings, but how do you actually share your emotions with them in healthy ways? You know you shouldn't make them your confidants, but where is the line between appropriate transparency and emotional enmeshment? You recognize helicopter parenting when you see it, but how do you stay involved without over-functioning?

You're navigating without a map, because the map you were given was drawn for a different destination entirely—one where children existed to meet their parents' needs, where boundaries were either non-existent or rigid walls, where love was measured in sacrifice and usefulness rather than secure attachment and autonomy.

This book is your new map.

It's written for parents who are doing the brave work of breaking generational patterns—parents who want their children to know freedom as their birthright, not as something they'll need to spend their adult years fighting to reclaim. It's for mothers and fathers who are learning that true love doesn't cling, doesn't manipulate, doesn't require endless self-sacrifice from the beloved. It's for those of you who are discovering that raising healthy children sometimes means letting them struggle, feel disappointed, and even be upset with you—and that this is not failure but faithfulness.

If you're reading this book, you already know that co-dependency isn't about being too loving or too devoted to your children. It's about unconsciously training them to manage your emotions, read your moods, sacrifice their needs for yours, and measure their worth by their usefulness to others. It's about raising children who know how to take care of everyone except themselves—children who will one day be sitting where you are now, wondering how to break free.

But here's the beautiful truth: you get to choose differently. Not perfectly—we'll talk extensively about what to do when you slip back into old patterns—but *differently*. You can raise children who know their worth comes from being image-bearers of God, not from how well they please others. You can model boundaries instead of just talking about them. You can let them be responsible for their own feelings while still offering comfort. You can prepare them for independence rather than subtly keeping them dependent.

What This Book Will (and Won't) Do

This is not a book about perfect parenting. If you're recovering from co-dependency, you've already spent enough of your life striving for an impossible standard of perfection while your own needs went unmet. This book will not add another impossible standard to your shoulders.

Instead, it will help you:

- **Recognize co-dependent patterns before they take root in your relationship with your children—from toddlerhood through the teenage years**
- **Learn age-appropriate ways to teach boundaries, autonomy, and emotional responsibility**
- **Understand the difference between healthy involvement and over-functioning, between protecting and preventing growth**
- **Navigate the specific challenges of each developmental stage through a lens of freedom rather than control**
- **Repair the relationship when you inevitably slip back into old patterns—because rupture and repair are how children learn that love is resilient**
- **Build a family culture where saying "no" is safe, where mistakes are learning opportunities, and where each person is responsible for their own feelings while still being responsive to each other**

Each chapter will address a different aspect of raising free children, with practical examples and age-appropriate strategies. We'll look at what co-dependency looks like with toddlers (who can't actually be emotionally responsible yet but can begin learning the foundations), with school-age children (who are developing their sense of self), and with teenagers (who need to individuate even when it's terrifying to watch).

Most importantly, we'll ground everything in this truth: Your children don't need perfect parents. They need recovering parents who are committed to their own wholeness and who are learning, alongside them, what healthy love actually looks like.

A Word About Grace

Before we go any further, let's establish something crucial: if you're reading this book, you're already breaking the cycle. The fact that you're thinking about these patterns, that you care about not passing them on, that you're willing to examine your parenting even when it's uncomfortable—this already sets you apart from the generations that came before.

You will make mistakes. You will have days when you fall back into old patterns—when you're stressed and suddenly you hear your mother's words coming out of your mouth, or when you realize you've been subtly making your child responsible for your emotional state. When this happens (not if, but when), you haven't failed. You've encountered an opportunity to model something your children desperately need to see: how to acknowledge mistakes, apologize genuinely, and repair relationship ruptures.

Co-dependent parenting isn't overcome through perfect performance. It's overcome through consistent self-awareness, genuine repair, and a commitment to your own continued healing. Your children don't need you to be flawless. They need you to be honest, to own your mistakes, and to keep growing.

Your Children's Worth—and Yours

Throughout this book, you'll notice references to finding our worth in Christ rather than in our usefulness to others. This isn't religious jargon—it's the foundation of breaking co-dependency. When we truly believe that we (and our children) are beloved by God simply because we exist, not because of what we do or who we please, everything shifts.

Your children are not here to meet your needs, validate your choices, or make you feel like a good parent. They are individual image-bearers with their own callings, preferences, personalities, and paths. Your job isn't to shape them into who you need them to be, but to steward who they already are—to give them roots deep enough to know where they come from and wings strong enough to fly toward where they're going.

And here's what might be the hardest truth for those of us recovering from co-dependency: Raising free children means preparing them to leave. It means accepting that if you do this well, they won't need you in the same way. They'll want relationship with you, but they won't require you to function. They'll love you, but they won't be dependent on your approval for their sense of self.

This is heartbreaking and beautiful—a taste of how God loves us into freedom rather than binding us in obligation.

How to Use This Book

You don't have to read this book in order, though there is a logical progression. If you have a toddler and a teenager, you might skip around to the chapters most relevant to your current challenges. If you're just beginning to recognize co-dependent patterns, you might want to start with the foundational chapters on boundaries and emotional responsibility.

Throughout the book, you'll find:

- **Reflection questions to help you identify patterns in your own upbringing and current parenting**
- **Age-specific examples to show what healthy vs. co-dependent parenting looks like at different stages**
- **Scripts and language for difficult conversations**
- **Warning signs that you might be slipping into old patterns**

- **Repair strategies for when you've made a mistake**

Consider keeping a journal as you read. This journey of breaking generational patterns is deeply personal, and you'll have insights and realizations that are unique to your story. Write them down. Notice your triggers. Celebrate your growth. Give yourself grace for the inevitable stumbles.

Let's Begin

You're holding this book because you want something different for your children—not because you don't love them, but because you do. Not because your parents didn't love you, but because you're learning that love without boundaries isn't really love at all—it's enmeshment wearing love's clothing.

The journey ahead isn't easy. There will be moments when setting boundaries with your child feels cruel, when letting them face natural consequences makes you physically ache, when saying "I hear you're disappointed" instead of fixing their problem goes against every instinct you've developed.

But on the other side of these uncomfortable moments is something precious: children who know they are loved for who they are, not for what they provide. Children who can say no without drowning in guilt. Children who can leave home without leaving themselves behind. Children who won't have to spend their twenties and thirties untangling the enmeshment you've been brave enough to refuse to create.

You're not just breaking a cycle. You're starting a legacy—a legacy of freedom, of secure attachment, of love that liberates rather than binds.

Your children will thank you, even if they don't have words for it yet.

Let's begin.

"It is for freedom that Christ has set us free. Stand firm, then, and do not let yourselves be burdened again by a yoke of slavery."

—Galatians 5:1

PART ONE: FOUNDATIONS

Understanding Co-Dependent Parenting

CHAPTER 1

Recognizing Co-Dependent Parenting: The Patterns We Repeat

*"Behold, children are a gift of the Lord, the fruit of the womb is a reward.
Like arrows in the hand of a warrior, so are the children of one's youth."
—Psalm 127:3-4 (NASB)*

Sarah sat across from me in the coffee shop, her hands wrapped around a mug she hadn't touched in twenty minutes. "I just realized something terrible," she said quietly. "My daughter is ten years old, and she already knows how to manage my moods. She comes downstairs in the morning and reads my face before she says anything. If I seem stressed, she gets quieter. If I'm upset, she tries to cheer me me up. She's *ten*."

She looked up, tears in her eyes. "I swore I would never do to her what was done to me. But somehow, I'm teaching her the same thing—that her job is to take care of the adults around her."

Sarah's awakening is both painful and precious. She's seeing what many parents miss entirely: the invisible ways we pass on the patterns we inherited, even when we desperately don't want to. Recognizing these patterns is the essential first step in breaking them. You cannot change what you cannot see.

This chapter will help you identify co-dependent parenting patterns in your own life—not to shame you, but to free you. As theologian Paul David Tripp writes, "Parenting is first and always about the parent. Before you ever talk about what your children need from you, it is vital to remember what you need from your Redeemer." This chapter is about honest self-examination in the light of God's grace, so that you can parent from wholeness rather than woundedness.

What Is Co-Dependent Parenting?

Let's start with clarity. Co-dependent parenting is not the same as devoted parenting, attentive parenting, or sacrificial love. It's not about being too involved or caring too much. Co-dependent parenting is a pattern where the parent unconsciously makes the child responsible for the parent's emotional well-being, sense of worth, or identity.

In co-dependent parenting:

- **The parent's emotional state depends on the child's behavior, mood, or achievements**
- **The child learns to monitor and manage the parent's feelings**
- **Boundaries between parent and child are blurred or non-existent**
- **The child's natural development toward independence triggers anxiety or resistance in the parent**
- **The parent over-functions, doing things for the child that the child could (and should) do themselves**
- **The parent uses the child as a confidant, therapist, or emotional support in ways that are developmentally inappropriate**
- **The child's worth becomes tied to performance, compliance, or how well they meet the parent's needs**

This is distinct from healthy, biblical parenting, where "children are a gift of the Lord" (Psalm 127:3)—not a project to validate us, not a source to fill our unmet needs, but a gift to steward with wisdom and release with blessing.

Dallas Willard notes in *The Divine Conspiracy*, "The aim of God in history is the creation of an all-inclusive community of loving persons, with himself included in that community as its prime sustainer and most glorious inhabitant." This vision includes the family—but a family where

each person is a distinct individual in relationship, not where individuals are lost in enmeshment.

The Four Faces of Co-Dependent Parenting

Co-dependency in parenting doesn't look the same in every family. Here are four common manifestations:

1. Helicopter Parenting: Over-Functioning and Preventing Growth

Helicopter parents hover constantly, swooping in to prevent any struggle, disappointment, or natural consequence. This might look like:

- Doing your teenager's homework because "they're so stressed"**
- Calling your adult child's employer to complain about their work schedule**
- Intervening in every playground conflict before your child can work it out**
- Making all decisions for your child long past the age when they should be learning to decide**
- Constantly texting your college student to check on them multiple times daily**
- Completing tasks your child is capable of doing because "it's easier" or "they'll mess it up"**

The motivation beneath helicopter parenting is usually anxiety—your anxiety about them failing, getting hurt, or not succeeding. But what you're actually teaching is that they can't handle life without you, that struggle is something to be avoided rather than learned from, and that they're not capable of facing challenges.

Marcus, a father of three, described his awakening: "I realized I was following my 14-year-old son around like a crisis management team. Forgot his homework? I'd drive it to school. Conflict with a friend? I'd call the other parent. Failed a test? I'd email the teacher to ask for a retake. I

thought I was being supportive, but my son stopped trying because he knew I'd catch him. I was teaching him learned helplessness."

2. Enmeshment: Blurred Boundaries and Merged Identities

Enmeshed parents have difficulty seeing where they end and their child begins. There's a fusion of identities, emotions, and needs. This looks like:

- **Saying "we" when you mean "you" ("We have a recital tonight" when it's your daughter's recital)**
- **Feeling personally devastated when your child experiences disappointment**
- **Being unable to separate your mood from your child's mood**
- **Talking about your child's achievements as if they validate your worth as a person**
- **Expecting your child to share everything with you and feeling hurt when they want privacy**
- **Becoming their identity—"soccer mom," "dance mom"—rather than maintaining your own**
- **Feeling threatened by your child's growing independence or outside relationships**

Teresa of Ávila wrote, "Let nothing disturb you, let nothing frighten you, all things are passing away: God never changes." Enmeshed parents are disturbed and frightened by their children's natural changes and growth because they've made their children into their God—the source of their meaning and stability.

Jennifer recognized this in herself: "When my daughter made the competitive cheer team, I was elated—not primarily for her, but because it felt like I had succeeded. When she decided to quit six months later, I cried for days. Not because I was sad for her, but because I felt like I was

losing part of my identity. That's when I realized how much I'd merged with her."

3. Emotional Incest: Using Children for Emotional Support

This is perhaps the most damaging and least recognized form of co-dependent parenting. Emotional incest (also called "covert incest") happens when a parent uses a child to meet emotional needs that should be met by adult relationships. This includes:

- **Confiding in your child about adult problems (marital issues, financial stress, your own childhood trauma)**
- **Making your child your primary source of emotional support or companionship**
- **Treating your child as a peer, confidant, or best friend rather than a child**
- **Sharing inappropriate details about your life, feelings, or relationships**
- **Leaning on your child for advice or comfort about adult situations**
- **Creating a dynamic where your child feels responsible for your happiness or emotional stability**
- **Putting your child in the middle of adult conflicts**

Scripture is clear about the parent-child relationship hierarchy. "Fathers, do not exasperate your children, so that they will not lose heart" (Colossians 3:21, NASB). When we burden children with adult emotional weight, we exasperate them—we place on their shoulders what they were never designed to carry.

Kenneth Bailey, in his work on Middle Eastern family structures in biblical times, notes that children in healthy biblical families were protected, provided for, and prepared for adulthood—not used to meet the parents'

needs. The parent-child relationship was fundamentally about the adult giving to the child, not extracting from them.

Rachel's story illustrates this pattern: "After my divorce, my 12-year-old son became my everything. I'd tell him about my loneliness, my frustrations with his dad, my financial worries. I'd ask his opinion on whether I should date someone. I thought I was being honest and treating him with respect. But I was actually making him my emotional husband. By the time he was 16, he was having panic attacks. He felt responsible for my wellbeing."

4. Performance Pressure: Love Conditional on Achievement

In this pattern, a child's worth is tied to their performance, achievements, or compliance. Love feels conditional—based on what they do rather than who they are. This manifests as:

- Praising only achievements, rarely character or effort
- Your mood being visibly affected by your child's grades, sports performance, or behavior
- Communicating (directly or indirectly) that your approval depends on their success
- Living vicariously through your child's accomplishments
- Pushing your child toward your unfulfilled dreams
- Difficulty celebrating your child when they're not performing well
- Comparing your child to siblings or peers

This distorts the gospel message at its core. "But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us" (Romans 5:8, NASB). God's love is not performance-based—it's based on His character and His choice. When we make our love conditional on our children's performance, we preach a different gospel in our homes than we claim to believe.

Timothy Keller writes in *The Meaning of Marriage*, "The Christian gospel is that I am so flawed that Jesus had to die for me, yet I am so loved and valued that Jesus was glad to die for me." Our children need to know both truths: they are flawed (and that's okay—we all are), and they are deeply loved regardless of performance.

Michael, a successful attorney, realized this pattern in himself: "I kept telling my kids I just wanted them to 'do their best,' but my face told a different story. If my son got a B, I'd ask what happened. If my daughter missed a goal in soccer, I'd spend the car ride home analyzing what went wrong. I never said 'I love you less when you don't succeed,' but I didn't have to. They felt it. My daughter told me she was afraid to try new things because she might disappoint me. That broke me."

How Your Childhood Shows Up in Your Parenting

Here's an uncomfortable truth: most of us parent the way we were parented, even when we swore we'd do things differently. The patterns are deeply grooved into our psyches, and they emerge especially when we're stressed, tired, or triggered.

Mapped childhood parenting patterns with compassionate, strategic insight.

I need to explore how childhood patterns repeat themselves. This is a crucial section. I should include:

- The concept of repeating what we experienced
- The idea of over-correcting (swinging to the opposite extreme)
- How trauma responses get activated in parenting
- The concept of triggered reactions vs. intentional responses
- Practical examples

I should be compassionate here while being truthful about how these patterns work.

There are typically three ways your childhood patterns show up in your parenting:

1. Repetition: Doing What Was Done to You

This is the most straightforward pattern. You parent the way you were parented because it's all you know. If your mother was anxious and controlling, you find yourself hovering over your children. If your father was emotionally distant, you struggle to show affection. If you were made responsible for your parents' emotions, you unconsciously train your children to manage yours.

The patterns feel normal because they're familiar. You might even defend them: "My parents did this and I turned out fine." But if you're reading this book, part of you knows you didn't turn out entirely fine—at least not in this area. You're carrying wounds that you don't want to pass on.

2. Over-Correction: Swinging to the Opposite Extreme

Sometimes, in our determination not to repeat our parents' mistakes, we swing to the opposite extreme—and create different problems with the same root.

If you grew up with rigid, authoritarian parents, you might become permissive, afraid to set any boundaries because you don't want to be "like them." If your parents were neglectful, you might become enmeshed, unable to let your child have any independence. If you grew up in poverty, you might overindulge your children financially, creating entitlement rather than gratitude.

The problem with over-correction is that you're still reacting to your past rather than responding to your present. You're parenting against something rather than toward something. Your childhood is still controlling you—just in a different direction.

3. Triggering: When the Past Hijacks the Present

This is perhaps the most insidious pattern. You're parenting intentionally, doing well, and then something happens—your child talks back, or fails at something, or rejects your help—and suddenly you're flooded with feelings that are disproportionate to the situation.

You're not just dealing with the present moment; you're re-experiencing your past. Your child's defiance triggers the shame you felt when you couldn't make your parent happy. Your child's failure activates your terror of not being good enough. Your child's independence resurrects your fear of abandonment.

Dietrich Bonhoeffer, in *Life Together*, writes: "The person who loves their dream of community will destroy community, but the person who loves those around them will create community." We can apply this to family: the parent who loves their dream of their child (or their dream of themselves as a parent) will damage their actual child, but the parent who loves their actual child—with all their complexity and independence—will create true relationship.

When you're triggered, you're not seeing your actual child in the present moment. You're seeing ghosts from your past, and you're reacting to those ghosts. This is where the most damage happens, because your child doesn't understand why you're so upset. They just know that something they did has caused a reaction that feels too big.

The Difference Between Healthy Involvement and Over-Functioning

One of the most confusing aspects of breaking co-dependent parenting is figuring out where the line is. After all, children do need parental involvement, guidance, and support. So how do you know when you've crossed from healthy to harmful?

Here's a helpful framework:

Healthy involvement is:

- **Age-appropriate:** You're doing what your child genuinely cannot yet do for themselves
- **Teaching-oriented:** You're showing them how so they can eventually do it themselves
- **Responsive:** You're responding to your child's actual needs, not your anxiety
- **Boundaried:** You maintain clear separation between your emotions and theirs
- **Empowering:** Your help increases their confidence and capability over time
- **Flexible:** You can adjust your involvement as they grow and develop

Over-functioning is:

- **Age-inappropriate:** You're doing things they can and should do for themselves
- **Preventing-oriented:** You're preventing struggle rather than teaching through it
- **Anxious:** You're acting on your fear rather than their need
- **Enmeshed:** Your emotional state depends on their situation
- **Disempowering:** Your help creates dependence and learned helplessness
- **Rigid:** You resist adjusting even as they demonstrate capability

Consider these examples:

Situation	Healthy Involvement	Over-Functioning
5-year-old learning to tie shoes	Showing them the technique, encouraging practice, allowing them to struggle with it, celebrating when they succeed	Continuing to tie their shoes because "it's faster" or "they get frustrated"
10-year-old has a conflict with a friend	Listening, asking questions to help them problem-solve, role-playing difficult conversations, letting them work it out	Calling the other parent, intervening directly, trying to fix the friendship yourself
16-year-old has a big project due	Checking in occasionally, being available if they ask for help, letting them experience natural consequences if they procrastinate	Staying up late to help finish it, doing significant portions yourself, emailing the teacher to ask for an extension
Adult child struggling financially	Listening empathetically, potentially helping them create a budget, offering a one-time specified gift if appropriate	Regularly paying their bills, bailing them out repeatedly, making their financial problems your emergency

Henri Nouwen writes in *The Return of the Prodigal Son*: "Homecoming is learning to receive the love that has been there all along." As parents, we're not creating our children's capability—we're recognizing it, nurturing it, and trusting that God has equipped them with what they need. Over-functioning communicates that we don't trust God's work in them or their inherent capability.

The question to ask yourself is: *Am I doing this because my child needs me to, or because I need to?* If you're honest, the answer will often reveal the difference between healthy involvement and over-functioning.

Warning Signs You're Making Your Children Responsible for Your Emotions

This is the heart of co-dependent parenting—the subtle (and sometimes not-so-subtle) ways we make our children feel responsible for how we feel. Here are the warning signs:

1. Your mood visibly changes based on your child's behavior or mood

You wake up in a good mood, but your teenager is sullen at breakfast, and now you're anxious and irritable. Your child comes home excited about something, and you light up. Your child is struggling, and you can't enjoy anything until they're okay.

This teaches children that they have the power to control your emotional state—which means they're responsible for it. They learn to manage your feelings rather than learning to manage their own.

2. You say things like "You're stressing me out" or "You're making me so upset"

Language matters. When we say "you're making me feel," we're literally telling our children that they control our emotions. The truth is, they trigger our emotions, but we're responsible for how we respond to those triggers.

Compare these statements:

- Co-dependent: "You're making me so angry right now!"**
- Healthy: "I'm feeling angry, and I need to calm down before we talk about this."**

The first makes the child responsible. The second models emotional ownership.

3. You need your child to apologize or change their behavior before you can regulate your emotions

If you stay angry or hurt until your child says sorry, or if you can't move on until they've "made it right," you're putting your emotional regulation in their hands.

Healthy parents can say, "I'm disappointed in your choice and we'll discuss consequences, but I'm working on managing my frustration." They don't hold their child hostage to their emotional state.

4. You share your feelings with your child in ways that make them feel responsible for fixing them

There's a difference between:

- "Mommy's having a hard day, so I might be a little quieter than usual. It's not your fault, and I'll be okay."**
- "Mommy's so sad. Can you be extra good today? I really need you to cooperate."**

The first is honest and age-appropriate. The second is a request for the child to manage your emotions.

5. Your child has learned to check your emotional temperature before they act

Sarah's daughter, reading her mother's face before speaking, is exhibiting this learned behavior. When children become emotional thermometers, constantly assessing the parent's state before determining how to be, they're being trained in co-dependency.

6. You feel hurt, betrayed, or abandoned when your child becomes more independent

If your teenager wanting to spend more time with friends feels like rejection, or if your young adult moving out feels like abandonment, this is a sign that you've made your emotional wellbeing dependent on your relationship with your child.

"Fathers, do not provoke your children to anger, but bring them up in the discipline and instruction of the Lord" (Ephesians 6:4, NASB). When we make children responsible for our emotions, we provoke them to anger—the anger of carrying what is not theirs to carry.

7. You need reassurance from your child that they love you, appreciate you, or that you're a good parent

Fishing for compliments, getting hurt when they don't express gratitude, feeling insecure about their love—these are signs you're looking to your child to fill your emotional tank. Our primary source of worth and security must be in Christ, not in our children's approval.

8. You struggle to allow your child to be in a bad mood without taking it personally

Children have bad moods. Teenagers especially have bad moods. If you can't let your child be grumpy without assuming it's about you, without trying to fix it, or without becoming upset yourself, you're too enmeshed with their emotional state.

Paul David Tripp notes: "You cannot be what you were designed to be—a tool of change—while being focused on yourself." When our children's moods control ours, we're focused on ourselves (how their mood affects us) rather than focused on them (what they might be experiencing).

Seeing Yourself Clearly: Self-Assessment

Awareness requires honesty. This self-assessment is designed not to shame you but to help you see patterns you may have missed. Remember, seeing the problem is the first step toward change.

Answer these questions with brutal honesty. No one is grading you. God already knows the truth, and He loves you completely—He's inviting you into freedom, not condemnation.

Self-Assessment Questionnaire

For each statement, rate yourself on a scale of 1-5: 1 = Never/Rarely 2 = Sometimes

3 = Often 4 = Usually 5 = Almost Always

Emotional Enmeshment:

- **___ My mood is significantly affected by my child's mood**
- **___ I feel anxious or unsettled when I sense my child is upset with me**
- **___ I struggle to enjoy my own activities when my child is struggling**
- **___ I find myself saying "we" when I mean "you" (we have practice, we have homework)**
- **___ I feel personally hurt or rejected when my child prefers to spend time with others**
- **___ I need to know my child is happy before I can relax**

Over-Functioning:

- **___ I do things for my child that they could reasonably do for themselves**
- **___ I intervene in my child's problems before they've had a chance to solve them**
- **___ I make excuses for my child's behavior or bail them out of natural consequences**
- **___ I have difficulty watching my child struggle without stepping in**
- **___ I complete tasks my child has started because they're taking too long or not doing it "right"**
- **___ I make most decisions for my child, even in areas where they could decide**

Inappropriate Emotional Intimacy:

- ☐ I confide in my child about adult problems (marriage, finances, work stress)
- ☐ I look to my child for emotional support or comfort
- ☐ I share details about my life that are developmentally inappropriate for my child's age
- ☐ My child is my primary companion or "best friend"
- ☐ I put my child in the middle of conflicts between adults
- ☐ I lean on my child for advice about adult situations

Performance-Based Acceptance:

- ☐ My approval of my child is visibly connected to their achievements
- ☐ I feel embarrassed or ashamed when my child doesn't succeed
- ☐ I praise my child's accomplishments more than their character
- ☐ I compare my child to siblings, peers, or my expectations
- ☐ My child's performance affects my self-worth as a parent
- ☐ I have difficulty celebrating my child when they're not performing well

Boundary Violations:

- ☐ I expect my child to share everything with me
- ☐ I feel hurt when my child wants privacy
- ☐ I read my child's texts, journal, or private communications without their knowledge
- ☐ I make my child feel guilty for wanting independence

- ___ I have difficulty allowing my child to have separate opinions or preferences
- ___ I use guilt, shame, or withdrawal to control my child's behavior

Totaling Your Score:

- **25-50:** You're likely practicing healthy, boundaried parenting in most areas. Continue being self-aware and address specific areas where you scored higher.
- **51-75:** You have some co-dependent patterns that are worth examining and changing. This book will help you identify and shift these patterns.
- **76-100:** Co-dependency is significantly influencing your parenting. Consider working with a therapist alongside using this book. Change is possible, but support will be valuable.
- **100+:** You're likely repeating significant patterns from your own childhood. Please be gentle with yourself—awareness is the first step, and seeking professional help alongside this book would be beneficial.

Remember: A high score doesn't mean you're a bad parent. It means you're carrying wounds that are affecting your parenting. The good news? Wounds can heal.

Identifying Your Triggers

Triggers are like landmines from your past buried in your present. When your child steps on one (usually unknowingly), you explode with emotions that are disproportionate to what actually happened. Learning to identify your triggers is essential for breaking co-dependent patterns.

Common parenting triggers for those with co-dependent backgrounds:

If you grew up responsible for a parent's emotions, you might be triggered by:

- Your child being upset and not easily comforted
- Your child's bad mood or withdrawal
- Your child expressing anger toward you
- Your child not appreciating something you did

If you grew up with performance pressure, you might be triggered by:

- Your child's mistakes or failures
- Your child not trying hard enough (in your perception)
- Your child showing less ambition or drive than you'd like
- Comparison situations where your child doesn't measure up

If you grew up with enmeshment, you might be triggered by:

- Your child wanting privacy or separate time
- Your child confiding in someone else instead of you
- Your child's growing independence
- Your child disagreeing with you or having different preferences

If you grew up with neglect, you might be triggered by:

- Your child not needing you
- Your child being self-sufficient
- Your own tiredness or desire for space
- Feeling like you're not needed or important

Trigger Tracking Exercise

For the next two weeks, keep a "trigger journal." When you notice yourself having a strong emotional reaction to your child's behavior, write down:

- 1. What happened (the factual situation)**

2. What you felt (identify the emotions)
3. How intense it was (1-10 scale)
4. What it reminded you of (does this feeling connect to your childhood?)
5. What you did (your response or reaction)
6. What you wish you'd done (your ideal response)

Example entry:

1. *What happened:* My 14-year-old son told me he didn't want me to come to his basketball game.
2. *What I felt:* Hurt, rejected, angry, panicked
3. *Intensity:* 8/10
4. *What it reminded me of:* The feeling of being unwanted by my mother, who was always too busy for me. The panic of not being needed.
5. *What I did:* I got upset and said, "After everything I do for you, you don't even want me there?"
6. *What I wish I'd done:* Taken a breath, recognized this was about my past, and said, "That's disappointing for me, but I respect your wishes. Can you help me understand why?"

This exercise will help you see patterns. You'll start recognizing when you're reacting to your past rather than responding to your present. This awareness creates a space—a pause—where change can happen.

Journaling About Your Childhood Patterns

Before you can break the cycle, you need to understand the cycle. This requires honest reflection about your own childhood. This may be painful, but it's necessary. Remember, you're not doing this to blame your parents

or wallow in victimhood. You're doing it to see clearly so you can choose differently.

Childhood Patterns Reflection Questions

Set aside quiet time with your journal. Ask the Holy Spirit to give you eyes to see and grace to face what's true. Work through these questions slowly, over several sessions if needed.

About Emotional Responsibility:

- **Whose emotions did you feel responsible for as a child?**
- **How did you know when a parent was upset? What did you do about it?**
- **Were you praised for being "sensitive," "mature," or "easy" in ways that meant you were managing adults' emotions?**
- **Did you feel like you had to be careful about how you felt or what you expressed?**
- **What happened when you were upset, angry, or having a bad day?**

About Boundaries:

- **Did you have privacy growing up? Could you close your door? Keep a journal without it being read?**
- **Were your preferences, opinions, or feelings respected?**
- **Could you say "no" to adults without consequences?**
- **Did your parents confide in you about adult problems?**
- **Were you expected to always include parents in your activities or friend groups?**

About Performance and Worth:

- **What did you have to do or be to feel loved and approved of?**
- **How did your parents respond to your failures or mistakes?**

- Were you compared to siblings or peers?
- Did your parents' mood change based on your achievements?
- What message did you receive about your worth?

About Independence:

- How did your parents respond when you wanted to do things on your own?
- Were you encouraged to develop your own interests, or pushed toward your parents' interests?
- What happened when you disagreed with your parents?
- Were you allowed to have your own opinions and preferences?
- How did your parents handle you growing up and needing them less?

About Emotional Expression:

- Which emotions were acceptable in your home? Which weren't?
- What happened when you were angry? Sad? Disappointed?
- Did you learn to suppress certain feelings?
- Were emotions talked about or swept under the rug?
- Did you feel safe being your authentic self?

As you journal, you'll likely see themes emerge. You might realize:

- "I was my mother's therapist"
- "I could never disappoint my father"
- "My worth was entirely in my grades"
- "I had to be perfect so my parent wouldn't fall apart"
- "I learned to have no needs"

These realizations are gifts, even though they hurt. They help you understand why certain aspects of parenting feel so difficult. You're not doing it wrong—you're working against powerful programming.

C.S. Lewis wrote in *Mere Christianity*: "We are not necessarily doubting that God will do the best for us; we are wondering how painful the best will turn out to be." Healing requires pain—the pain of seeing truth. But on the other side of that pain is the freedom you're seeking.

The Path Forward: From Awareness to Change

Awareness alone doesn't create change, but it's the essential foundation. You cannot address what you cannot see. Now that you're beginning to recognize co-dependent patterns in your parenting, here's what comes next:

1. Practice Self-Compassion

You learned these patterns because they were your survival strategies. They helped you navigate a difficult childhood. Thank them for serving you, and recognize that you can now choose different patterns because you're no longer that powerless child. You're an adult with options, with God's help available, with the ability to change.

2. Don't Try to Change Everything at Once

Pick one pattern to work on. Maybe it's noticing when your mood is being controlled by your child's mood. Maybe it's stopping yourself before you over-function. Change happens in small, consistent steps, not giant leaps.

3. Build in a Pause

Between trigger and response, create a pause. When you notice yourself getting emotionally activated, practice pausing before you speak or act. Even three deep breaths can create enough space for you to choose your response rather than react from your wound.

4. Seek Support

This work is hard to do alone. Consider:

- **A therapist who specializes in family systems or co-dependency**
- **A trusted friend who can offer perspective**
- **A support group for parents in recovery**
- **Your spouse or co-parent as an ally in noticing patterns**

5. Repair When You Slip

You will slip. You'll have days when you fall back into old patterns. This is normal and expected. What matters is what you do next—which we'll discuss in detail in a later chapter. For now, know that the ability to repair is more important than the ability to be perfect.

6. Trust the Process

Change takes time. Your childhood patterns developed over years—they won't disappear overnight. But every time you notice a pattern, every time you pause, every time you choose differently, you're creating new neural pathways. You're becoming a different kind of parent.

"Therefore if anyone is in Christ, this person is a new creation; the old things passed away; behold, new things have come" (2 Corinthians 5:17, NASB). You are being made new. The old patterns are passing away. Trust that God is doing this work in you.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- **Co-dependent parenting includes helicopter parenting, enmeshment, emotional incest, and performance pressure—all of which make children responsible for parents' emotional wellbeing**

- Your childhood patterns show up through repetition, over-correction, or triggered reactions
- Healthy involvement empowers children toward independence; over-functioning creates dependence
- Warning signs include your mood being controlled by your child's mood, needing reassurance from your child, and difficulty with their independence
- Identifying your specific triggers and childhood patterns is essential for breaking the cycle

Remember: Awareness is not self-condemnation. It's the light that shows you the path forward. You're not a bad parent for having these patterns—you're a brave parent for being willing to see them and change them.

Action Steps This Week:

1. Complete the self-assessment questionnaire honestly
2. Begin your trigger tracking journal
3. Set aside time to start working through the childhood patterns reflection questions
4. Identify one specific pattern you'd like to focus on changing
5. Share with one trusted person what you're learning (if safe and appropriate)

Closing Prayer:

Heavenly Father, thank You for the courage to see what is true, even when truth is painful. Thank You that Your light exposes not to shame but to heal. Help me to look honestly at the patterns I've inherited and the ways I'm unconsciously passing them to my children. Give me grace for myself,

wisdom to change, and trust that You are making all things new—including me. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, so that you may prove what the will of God is, that which is good and acceptable and perfect."

—Romans 12:2 (NASB)

CHAPTER 2

Parenting from Your Healing: How Your Recovery Shapes Their Freedom

"Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies and God of all comfort, who comforts us in all our affliction so that we will be able to comfort those who are in any affliction with the comfort with which we ourselves are comforted by God."

—2 Corinthians 1:3-4 (NASB)

Lisa sat in my office, tears streaming down her face. "I've been in therapy for two years working on my co-dependency issues," she said. "I'm learning to set boundaries, to not take responsibility for everyone's emotions, to recognize my worth in Christ instead of in what I do for others. But I have three kids—ages 7, 10, and 13. I've already damaged them. They've already learned these patterns from me. How can I parent them toward freedom when I'm still learning it myself? Don't you have to be healed before you can help anyone else?"

She voiced the fear that haunts many parents in recovery: *I'm too broken to do this right. I'm disqualified by my struggle. My children deserve better than a parent who's still figuring it out.*

But here's the truth that Lisa desperately needed to hear, and that you need to hear too: You are not disqualified by your struggle. You are equipped by it.

Your healing journey—messy, imperfect, ongoing—is not a liability in your parenting. It's one of the most powerful gifts you can give your children. Not because you're doing it perfectly, but precisely because you're doing it imperfectly, honestly, and with humble dependence on God.

This chapter will help you understand how to parent *from* your healing rather than waiting until you're fully healed (spoiler: none of us ever are). It will show you what your children gain from watching you heal, how to

navigate the guilt about past mistakes, and how to share your growth journey in age-appropriate ways.

You're Not Disqualified by Your Struggle—You're Equipped by It

The enemy's most effective lie to recovering co-dependents is this: *You're too messed up to parent well. Wait until you're fixed.* But Scripture tells a radically different story.

Look at the people God used throughout the Bible:

- Moses, a murderer with a speech impediment, led Israel out of slavery
- David, an adulterer who arranged a murder, was called a man after God's own heart
- Peter, who denied Christ three times, became the rock on which the church was built
- Paul, who persecuted Christians, wrote most of the New Testament

God doesn't wait until we're perfect to use us. In fact, He seems to prefer using broken vessels—because broken vessels know they're dependent on Him rather than themselves.

As Paul David Tripp writes in *Parenting: 14 Gospel Principles That Can Radically Change Your Family*: "You are not the Messiah in your children's lives. You are a tool of the Messiah. Your children don't need a perfect parent. They never did and they never will. What your children need is a Messiah, which is exactly what God has provided."

Your struggle with co-dependency has taught you things that a person who never struggled couldn't teach:

- You understand the pain of not knowing where you end and others begin
- You know what it feels like to lose yourself trying to be what everyone needs

- You've experienced the exhaustion of being responsible for others' emotions
- You're learning what healthy boundaries look like from the inside out
- You understand both the cost of co-dependency and the value of freedom

These aren't liabilities. These are credentials. You can speak to your children about freedom from a place of authenticity because you're walking the road yourself. You can help them avoid the pit because you know how deep and dark it is.

Brennan Manning, in *The Ragamuffin Gospel*, writes: "The gospel of grace calls out, 'Nothing is impossible to me. I can deal with the worst that you are, the worst that you have been, and the worst that you could ever be. My grace is sufficient for you. My love is unconditional.'" This is the message you get to model for your children: God uses messy, struggling, recovering people. They don't have to be perfect to be useful, loved, or valuable.

Here's what your struggle equips you to teach your children:

1. **Humility:** Perfect parents (if they existed) would model self-sufficiency. You model dependence on God. Your children learn that strength isn't found in having it all together but in knowing you need help.
2. **Grace:** When you extend grace to yourself for your mistakes, you teach your children to do the same. They learn that failure isn't final, that growth is gradual, and that God's love isn't conditional on performance.
3. **Honesty:** Your willingness to acknowledge your struggles gives your children permission to be honest about theirs. You're creating a family culture where we don't have to pretend.

- 4. Resilience:** Your children watch you struggle and keep going. They see you fall and get back up. This teaches them that difficult things can be worked through, that healing is possible, and that courage isn't the absence of fear but forward movement despite it.
- 5. Hope:** When your children see you changing patterns that have been in place for decades, they learn that change is possible at any stage. Nothing is set in stone. Healing is available. Freedom can be found.

"For I am confident of this very thing, that He who began a good work in you will perfect it until the day of Christ Jesus" (Philippians 1:6, NASB). God is not finished with you. You are a work in progress—and that's exactly what your children need to see.

Parenting in Process: What to Share, What to Protect

One of the most confusing aspects of parenting from your healing is determining what's appropriate to share with your children about your journey. You don't want to hide your growth (they need to see it), but you also don't want to make them your therapist (which would be repeating co-dependent patterns).

Here's the key principle: You can be honest about your process without burdening them with your pain.

There's a crucial difference between:

- Sharing:** "I'm learning to set better boundaries, and I'm practicing by not responding to texts immediately just because someone else wants me to."
- Burdening:** "I'm so stressed about setting boundaries with your grandmother. She makes me feel so guilty, and I don't know what to do. What do you think I should do?"

The first is transparent and age-appropriate. The second makes the child responsible for your emotional processing and decision-making.

The Framework: What to Share

You can appropriately share with your children:

1. That you're learning and growing

- **"I'm working on being a better listener instead of trying to fix everything."**
- **"I'm learning to manage my own feelings instead of expecting others to make me feel better."**
- **"I'm practicing saying no when I need to, even when it's hard."**

2. When you make a mistake and how you're correcting it

- **"I realized I was too involved in solving your problem earlier. That was my anxiety, not what you needed. I'm sorry. How can I support you better?"**
- **"I got frustrated because you were upset, but your feelings aren't my responsibility to control. I'm working on letting you have your feelings without making them about me."**

3. The skills and principles you're learning (age-appropriately)

- **"One thing I'm learning is that everyone is responsible for their own feelings. That means I can care about how you feel without trying to make your feelings go away."**
- **"I'm discovering that healthy relationships have boundaries—places where one person ends and another begins. I didn't learn that growing up, so I'm learning it now."**

4. How God is working in your life

- **"I'm learning to trust that God loves me even when I'm not perfect or productive. It's hard to believe sometimes, but I'm practicing."**
- **"God is teaching me that I can rest without feeling guilty. That's really new for me."**

5. General patterns without specific adult details

- "I grew up in a family where we didn't talk about feelings much, so I'm learning how to do that now."
- "I didn't have good examples of boundaries when I was young, so setting them feels really uncomfortable for me—but I'm practicing because they're important."

The Framework: What to Protect

You should NOT share with your children:

1. Adult relationship problems

- Don't discuss marital issues, conflicts with their other parent (if separated), or adult relationship drama
- Don't share financial fears or worries in ways that make them feel responsible

2. Your therapeutic process details

- Don't recount your therapy sessions or process your trauma with them
- Don't share your therapist's insights about your childhood in ways that make them privy to adult psychological processing

3. Negative information about their other parent or extended family

- Don't share your frustrations with their grandparents, aunts, uncles, or other parent
- Don't explain how family members hurt or damaged you
- Don't justify your boundaries with family members by vilifying those family members

4. Your intense emotional struggles in real-time

- Don't lean on them for comfort when you're having a hard day

- Don't share anxiety or depression symptoms in ways that make them feel responsible for helping you feel better

5. Information that would damage their sense of security

- Don't share fears about your ability to parent them
- Don't express doubts about whether you're damaging them
- Don't share information that would make them question their safety or stability

Dietrich Bonhoeffer wisely noted: "The mark of solitude is silence, as speech is the mark of community." There is a time for speech with your children and a time for silent processing in your own spaces (therapy, journaling, conversations with other adults). Wisdom is knowing which is which.

Age-Appropriate Sharing Guidelines

The age and developmental stage of your child significantly impacts what and how you share.

Ages 0-5 (Early Childhood): At this stage, children are concrete thinkers who need consistency and security more than explanations. They don't need to know about your healing journey in explicit terms.

What they need:

- Consistent, warm presence
- Clear, simple boundaries
- Patience when you're working on not over-functioning
- To see you managing your own emotions (without explanation)

What you might say:

- "Mommy is feeling frustrated right now. I'm going to take some deep breaths to calm down."

- "I made a mistake when I yelled. I'm sorry. I'm working on using gentle words even when I'm upset."

Ages 6-12 (Middle Childhood): Children this age are developing more sophisticated thinking and starting to notice patterns. They can handle more information about your growth without being burdened.

What they need:

- Honesty about your imperfection without details that scare them
- To see you modeling skills (boundary-setting, emotion regulation, apologizing)
- Age-appropriate explanations of changes in your parenting
- Reassurance that your growth isn't about them being bad

What you might say:

- "I'm learning to let people be responsible for their own feelings. So when you're upset, I'm going to listen and care, but I'm not going to try to make your feelings go away. Your feelings are okay to have."
- "I realized I was doing too much for you—things you can do yourself. I'm going to let you handle [specific task] on your own now, not because I don't love you, but because I believe in your capability."
- "I'm working on not taking it personally when people are in bad moods. So if you're grumpy, I'm going to give you space instead of asking a million questions or trying to cheer you up."

Ages 13-18 (Adolescence): Teenagers can handle more complex concepts and benefit from understanding the "why" behind your changes. They're also developmentally primed to question and challenge, which means they might push back on changes in your parenting.

What they need:

- Honest acknowledgment that you're changing some patterns

- **Respect for their intelligence and ability to understand complexity**
- **Consistency even when they test new boundaries**
- **Your willingness to hear their feedback without becoming defensive**
- **To see you owning mistakes and working on growth**

What you might say:

- **"I'm realizing that some of how I've parented came from my own anxiety rather than what you actually needed. I'm working on trusting you more and hovering less."**
- **"I grew up in a family where we didn't have healthy boundaries, and I'm learning what those look like now. That means some things are going to change—like me not reading your texts without permission. I'm sorry I did that before."**
- **"I've been too focused on your performance and achievements. I'm working on celebrating who you are, not just what you do. That's my issue to work on, not yours to fix."**
- **"I'm learning that I can't control your choices, and trying to do so was hurting our relationship. I'm going to state my values and expectations clearly, set appropriate consequences, but ultimately trust you to make your own decisions—and learn from them."**

Young Adults (18+): If you have adult children, you can be even more transparent about your journey, though still without burdening them or making them your therapist.

What you might say:

- **"I'm doing some work in therapy around co-dependency patterns I learned in my family growing up. I'm realizing I did some of those same things with you, and I'm sorry. I want our adult relationship to be healthier."**

- **"I'm learning to let you live your life without me needing to be involved in every decision. It's hard for me, but it's important. I want you to know I'm working on it."**
- **"Can I ask for your patience as I figure out what a healthy parent-adult child relationship looks like? I didn't have a good model for this."**

Timothy Keller writes: "The gospel is this: We are more sinful and flawed in ourselves than we ever dared believe, yet at the very same time we are more loved and accepted in Jesus Christ than we ever dared hope." Share this message with your children—not just in words, but through your own willingness to acknowledge your flaws while standing secure in God's love.

How Your Children Benefit from Watching You Heal

There's a powerful phenomenon that happens when children watch their parents engage in real, honest healing work: they learn that growth is possible, that change is normal, and that struggle doesn't disqualify you from love or purpose.

Consider what your children are learning when they watch you heal from co-dependency:

1. They Learn That Adults Don't Have It All Figured Out—And That's Okay

When you model being a learner, your children learn that adulthood isn't about having arrived but about continuing to grow. They see that maturity includes saying "I don't know," "I made a mistake," and "I'm still learning."

This is profoundly countercultural. Our society worships expertise and confidence. But your children learn something better from you: humility and teachability are strengths, not weaknesses.

Research in developmental psychology shows that children who see their parents model vulnerability and growth develop what Carol Dweck calls a "growth mindset"—the belief that abilities and understanding can be

developed through effort and learning. Children who watch you work on yourself learn to work on themselves.

2. They Learn What Repentance and Repair Look Like in Real Time

Repentance isn't just a theological concept—it's a lived practice. When your children watch you recognize a pattern, confess it, and actively work to change it, they're seeing metanoia (the Greek word for repentance, meaning "to change one's mind") in action.

They learn that:

- Mistakes can be acknowledged without shame spiraling
- Apologizing doesn't diminish authority; it strengthens relationship
- Change is possible at any age
- God's grace is practical, not just theoretical

J.I. Packer writes in *Knowing God*: "The Christmas message is that there is hope for a ruined humanity—hope of pardon, hope of peace with God, hope of glory—because at the Father's will Jesus became poor, and was born in a stable so that thirty years later He might hang on a cross." Your children see the incarnation of this hope when they watch you be transformed by grace.

3. They Learn to Name and Work Through Their Own Issues

When you normalize the language of growth—boundaries, triggers, patterns, therapy, healing—your children gain vocabulary for their own experiences. They're more likely to seek help when they struggle because they've seen that seeking help is what healthy people do.

You're also breaking the generational pattern of silence. Instead of pretending everything is fine, you're creating a family culture where we acknowledge struggles and work through them. This gives your children permission to be honest about their own challenges.

4. They Learn That Relationships Can Change and Improve

One of the most hopeful things children see when you're in recovery is that relationships aren't static. If things haven't been healthy, they can become healthier. If patterns have been problematic, patterns can change.

This is especially important if your older children already learned co-dependent patterns from you in their younger years. When they see you changing, they learn that they're not stuck either. The script can be rewritten. The story can have a different ending.

5. They Develop Realistic Compassion

When children see their parents struggle and grow, they develop compassionate realism—they learn that people are complex, that everyone struggles, and that love means supporting someone through their growth process, not requiring them to be perfect.

This prepares them for all future relationships. They won't expect perfection from friends, spouses, colleagues, or themselves. They'll have realistic expectations and the skills to navigate imperfection with grace.

6. They Learn What It Looks Like to Trust God Through a Process

Your recovery journey is teaching your children what it looks like to walk by faith when you don't see the whole path ahead. They watch you trust God to help you change. They see you depend on Scripture, prayer, community, and the Holy Spirit's work in you.

"And we know that God causes all things to work together for good to those who love God, to those who are called according to His purpose" (Romans 8:28, NASB). Your children are watching God work all things together for good—including your past wounds, current struggles, and ongoing healing. They're learning that God is faithful even when the journey is long.

Augustine wrote: "God had one son on earth without sin, but never one without suffering." Your children are learning that suffering and struggle

don't mean God's absence—they can be the very places where His presence is most evident.

Managing Guilt About Past Co-Dependent Parenting

This may be the heaviest weight you carry: the guilt about what you've already done. The years before you knew better. The patterns you've already passed on. The ways you've already hurt your children.

Lisa, from the beginning of this chapter, expressed this: "My 13-year-old has already learned to read my moods and adjust her behavior to keep me happy. My 10-year-old already apologizes constantly. My 7-year-old already worries about me. Haven't I already damaged them?"

Let's address this guilt head-on, because it will sabotage your healing if you don't work through it.

Truth #1: Guilt Is Appropriate; Shame Is Not

There's a crucial difference between guilt and shame:

- Guilt says: "I did something wrong." It's specific, addressable, and leads to repentance and change.
- Shame says: "I am something wrong." It's global, paralyzing, and leads to hiding and defensiveness.

Guilt is appropriate. If you've parented in co-dependent ways, you *have* done things that weren't healthy for your children. Acknowledging this is honest and necessary.

But shame—the voice that says you're irredeemably broken, that you've ruined your children, that you're disqualified as a parent—is from the enemy, not from God.

"Therefore there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus" (Romans 8:1, NASB). Notice it doesn't say "no conviction" or "no correction." It says no *condemnation*. God convicts to restore, not condemns to destroy.

Henri Nouwen writes in *The Return of the Prodigal Son*: "I am beginning now to see how radically the character of my spiritual journey will change when I no longer think of God as hiding out and making it as difficult as possible for me to find him, but, instead, as the one who is looking for me while I am doing the hiding." God isn't looking at you with disgust over your parenting mistakes. He's pursuing you with the offer of grace, transformation, and hope.

Truth #2: Your Children Are Not Hopelessly Damaged

This is crucial to understand: your children are resilient, and change at any point makes a difference.

Yes, your children have likely learned some co-dependent patterns. But they're not set in stone. Children and teenagers are neurologically plastic—their brains are still developing and forming. Patterns can be unlearned. New pathways can be created.

Moreover, research on resilience shows that one of the most protective factors for children is having at least one adult who is working on their own health. That's you. You are that factor.

Even if you parented in unhealthy ways for years, changing now still matters. Your 13-year-old who learned to read your moods? She can unlearn that if you stop rewarding it and start modeling healthy boundaries. Your 10-year-old who apologizes constantly? He can develop more confidence as you show him that he's not responsible for your emotions. Your 7-year-old who worries about you? She can learn to be a child again as you do your own emotional work instead of leaning on her.

Neuroplasticity research shows us that the brain continues to change throughout life in response to new experiences. Your changed behavior creates new experiences for your children—and their brains respond.

Truth #3: Repair Is Powerful

One of the most important findings in attachment research (from researchers like Ed Tronick and Daniel Siegel) is this: What matters most isn't perfect attunement; it's repair after rupture.

Children don't need perfect parents. They need parents who can recognize when they've messed up, acknowledge it, and repair the relationship. In fact, rupture-and-repair cycles actually *strengthen* secure attachment when done well.

When you say to your child, "I realize I've been making you responsible for my feelings, and that's not fair to you. I'm working on handling my own emotions. I'm sorry for putting that on you"—you're doing something incredibly powerful. You're:

- **Modeling accountability**
- **Showing them they're not crazy (they did notice something was off)**
- **Releasing them from responsibility**
- **Demonstrating that relationships can be repaired**
- **Teaching them what healthy apology looks like**

This repair might actually teach them more than if you'd never made the mistake in the first place.

Truth #4: God Specializes in Redemption

Your story isn't over. Your children's stories aren't over. God is in the business of redeeming and restoring what was broken.

Look at the biblical pattern:

- **Joseph's brothers sold him into slavery, but God used it to save nations (Genesis 50:20)**
- **David committed adultery and murder, yet Solomon (the son born from that relationship) built the temple and wrote wisdom literature**

- The Israelites wandered 40 years due to disobedience, but God still brought them to the Promised Land
- Peter denied Christ three times, but became a foundational church leader

God doesn't waste our failures. He weaves them into stories of redemption.

Paul David Tripp writes: "Every parent is a flawed human being seeking to parent flawed human beings. The kind of help we all need and can give is found not in our goodness, intelligence, or willpower. It's only found in the person and work of Jesus Christ."

Your past co-dependent parenting doesn't disqualify you. In God's economy, when surrendered to Him, it becomes part of the testimony of His transforming power.

Practical Steps for Managing Guilt

1. Confess specifically to God Don't just feel vaguely guilty. Name specific things you've done that weren't healthy. Confess them to God. Receive His forgiveness. "If we confess our sins, He is faithful and righteous to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness" (1 John 1:9, NASB).

2. Make amends where appropriate With older children (typically ages 8+), you can offer age-appropriate apologies:

- "I realize I've made you feel responsible for my happiness. That wasn't fair. I'm working on that, and I'm sorry."
- "I've been too controlling about your choices because of my own anxiety. I'm going to work on trusting you more."
- "I didn't give you enough room to have your own feelings. I'm sorry for that."

3. Don't over-apologize There's a balance. You don't want to burden your children with excessive confession or make them comfort you about your guilt. A simple, clear apology and changed behavior is enough. Don't turn your apology into a therapy session where they end up taking care of your feelings about your failures.

4. Focus on today You can't go back and redo the past ten years. But you can parent differently today. Each day is a new opportunity to choose healthier patterns.

5. Get support for processing guilt Work through guilt feelings with your therapist, a trusted friend, or a pastor—not with your children. They need to see the outcome of your processing (changed behavior, appropriate amends), not the messy middle of working through shame and regret.

6. Remember that God's timeline is different than ours You might think, "If only I'd figured this out five years ago!" But God's timing is perfect. You're learning this now because this is when you're ready to learn it. Trust that God's redemptive work began the moment you became aware and started changing.

Corrie ten Boom, who survived the Nazi concentration camps, said: "Never be afraid to trust an unknown future to a known God." You don't know how your children's stories will unfold, but you know the God who holds their stories—and yours.

Creating a "Fresh Start" Conversation with Your Children

Once you've recognized co-dependent patterns and begun working on them, it can be helpful to have a "fresh start" conversation with your children. This acknowledges changes they're noticing and gives context without burdening them.

Here's how to structure this conversation:

Preparation:

- **Pray about the conversation**

- Write out key points you want to make
- Decide what's age-appropriate to share
- Check your motives: Are you seeking their forgiveness inappropriately, or are you simply acknowledging change?
- Consider whether to have this conversation with children individually or together (depends on ages and dynamics)

Structure of the Conversation:

1. Acknowledge without over-explaining "I want to talk with you about some changes you might notice in how I'm parenting. I've been learning some things about myself and about healthy families."

2. Name specific changes they'll see (age-appropriately) For younger children (6-10): "I'm working on letting you solve more of your own problems instead of always jumping in to fix things. That doesn't mean I don't care—it means I believe you're capable."

For preteens/teens (11-17): "I've realized I've been too anxious about your choices and too controlling about your life. I'm going to work on trusting you more and giving you more room to make your own decisions—and learn from them."

3. Offer a brief, appropriate apology if warranted "I'm sorry for the times I've made you feel like you're responsible for my feelings. That's not your job."

(Don't elaborate extensively or get emotional in ways that make them comfort you)

4. Clarify what this means practically "What this means is:

- I'm going to listen to your feelings without trying to fix them right away
- I'm going to let you experience more natural consequences instead of bailing you out

- I'm going to work on not taking it personally when you're upset or when you make choices I wouldn't make
- I'm still your parent and I still have expectations, but I'm going to communicate them differently"

5. Invite questions (but don't require processing) "Do you have any questions about this?"

(Be prepared for silence, skepticism, or few questions. Don't pressure them to respond.)

6. Reassure about love and security "These changes are because I love you and want you to grow into a healthy, independent adult. Nothing about my love for you is changing—only some of how I show it."

7. Acknowledge that you'll make mistakes "I'm learning, so I'm going to mess up sometimes. When I do, I'll try to notice and correct it. And you can tell me if something doesn't feel right—I'll listen."

Sample Scripts by Age:

Ages 6-10: "Hey sweetie, I want to tell you about something I'm working on. I've been learning that sometimes I try to fix all your problems really fast, and I don't give you a chance to figure things out yourself. That's because I love you so much, but it's not actually helping you learn. So you're going to notice that sometimes when you have a problem, I'm going to ask you questions instead of just fixing it. That doesn't mean I don't care—it means I believe you're smart and capable. Does that make sense?"

Ages 11-14: "I want to talk with you about some changes I'm making in how I parent. I've realized that I've been pretty anxious and controlling about your life—what you do, who you're with, how things turn out. Some of that anxiety came from my own stuff, not from you actually being untrustworthy. So I'm working on trusting you more and giving you more space to make your own choices. I'm still your parent, and there are still

rules and expectations, but I'm going to try to hover less and trust more. This is hard for me, so I might mess it up sometimes, but I want you to know I'm trying. What do you think about that?"

Ages 15-18: "I need to talk with you about something I'm working on. I've come to realize that some of how I've parented has been more about my own anxiety and need for control than about what you actually needed. I've been too involved, too worried, and not trusting enough—both of you and of God to take care of you. I'm working on that. You're going to see me back off more, ask fewer questions, and let you experience more natural consequences of your choices. This doesn't mean I don't care—it means I'm trying to prepare you for adulthood instead of keeping you dependent on me. I'm also sorry for the ways I've made you feel responsible for my emotions or like my approval was based on your performance. That wasn't right. I'm learning what healthier boundaries look like, and that's going to change some things in our relationship. I hope for the better. What questions do you have?"

After the Conversation:

Don't expect immediate response or gratitude. Your children might:

- Say little or nothing
- Act suspicious or skeptical
- Test the new boundaries immediately
- Seem relieved but not express it
- Not seem to care much at all

All of these responses are normal. Give them time to process and watch for changes rather than expecting verbal affirmation.

Be consistent. Your children will believe the changes when they see them consistently over time, not because you announced them.

Don't bring it up repeatedly. One conversation is enough. Now just live it out. If you need to reference it later, you can say something like, "Remember I said I was working on hovering less? I'm noticing I'm trying to fix this for you instead of letting you handle it. Let me back up."

Follow through on the invitation to point out when you slip. If your teenager says, "Mom, you're doing that thing where you're trying to manage my feelings again," receive that feedback with grace rather than defensiveness. This is part of the repair process.

Grace for Yourself: You're Doing Better Than You Think

I want to end this chapter with something you might not hear often enough: You're doing better than you think you are.

The fact that you're reading this book, that you're doing your own healing work, that you're thinking about these patterns instead of just repeating them—this already sets you apart. Most people never get here. Most people parent on autopilot, never questioning whether there's a healthier way.

You are brave. You are doing hard work. You are facing painful truths about your past and your patterns. You are choosing change even when it would be easier to stay comfortable.

Your children are blessed to have you as their parent—not in spite of your struggle, but partly because of it. You're teaching them what it looks like to be human, to be humble, to be healing, and to be wholly dependent on God's grace.

C.S. Lewis wrote in *Mere Christianity*: "No man knows how bad he is till he has tried very hard to be good." You're trying hard to be good, and in the process, you're discovering your need for grace. This is sanctification. This is growth. This is what it looks like to become more like Christ.

Be gentle with yourself. Extend to yourself the same grace you're learning to extend to your children. You don't have to be perfect. You don't have to

have it all figured out. You just have to keep showing up, keep being honest, keep depending on God, and keep choosing differently.

Your healing is their hope. What they see you overcome teaches them that freedom is possible—not just theoretically, but actually, tangibly, in real life.

God is not finished with you. He's not finished with your children. He's not finished with your family's story.

"For I am confident of this very thing, that He who began a good work in you will perfect it until the day of Christ Jesus" (Philippians 1:6, NASB).

The good work began the moment you started noticing. The good work continues every time you choose differently. The good work will be completed—not in your own strength, but in His.

Trust the process. Walk the path. Give yourself grace.

Your healing is their hope.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- Your struggle with co-dependency doesn't disqualify you from parenting well—it equips you with empathy, humility, and authentic understanding**
- You can share your growth journey with your children in age-appropriate ways without burdening them with your emotional processing**
- Your children benefit enormously from watching you heal: they learn growth is possible, repentance is real, and that adults can change**
- Guilt is appropriate and leads to repentance; shame is destructive and leads to hiding**

- **Your past co-dependent parenting hasn't hopelessly damaged your children—repair is powerful and change at any point matters**
- **A "fresh start" conversation can acknowledge changes without over-explaining or burdening**

Remember: Your children don't need a perfect parent. They need a healing parent who models humility, repentance, dependence on God, and the courage to change. You are that parent.

Action Steps This Week:

- 1. Identify one aspect of your healing journey that you can appropriately share with your children this week**
- 2. Write out what you'd say in a "fresh start" conversation (even if you're not ready to have it yet)**
- 3. Journal about three ways your struggle has actually equipped you to be a better parent**
- 4. Write yourself a grace letter: What would you say to a friend who was carrying the same guilt you carry?**
- 5. Celebrate one specific way you've already changed your parenting patterns**

Reflection Questions:

- 1. What has been your biggest fear about parenting while still healing from co-dependency? How does this chapter speak to that fear?**
- 2. What aspects of your healing journey have you been hiding from your children out of shame? What might be appropriate to share?**
- 3. How did your parents handle their own mistakes and growth (or lack thereof)? How do you want to be different?**

4. What guilt are you carrying about past parenting? What would it look like to confess it to God and receive His forgiveness?
 5. What do you want your children to learn from watching your healing journey?
-

Closing Prayer:

Father God, thank You that You use broken vessels. Thank You that my struggle doesn't disqualify me but can actually equip me to love my children better. Help me to walk in grace—both receiving Your grace for my past mistakes and extending grace to myself as I continue to grow. Give me wisdom to know what to share and what to protect. Help my children see not a perfect parent, but a healing one who is dependent on You. Let my journey toward freedom become a pathway they can follow. I trust You to complete the good work You've begun—in me and in them. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"Therefore, having been justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom also we have obtained our introduction by faith into this grace in which we stand; and we exult in hope of the glory of God. And not only this, but we also exult in our tribulations, knowing that tribulation brings about perseverance; and perseverance, proven character; and proven character, hope; and hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us."

—Romans 5:1-5 (NASB)

CHAPTER 3

God's Design for Parent-Child Relationships: Biblical Balance

"For You formed my inward parts; You wove me in my mother's womb. I will give thanks to You, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made; wonderful are Your works, and my soul knows it very well. My frame was not hidden from You, when I was made in secret, and skillfully wrought in the depths of the earth; Your eyes have seen my unformed substance; and in Your book were all written the days that were ordained for me, when as yet there was not one of them."

—Psalm 139:13-16 (NASB)

Rebecca held her three-week-old daughter, tears streaming down her face. "I just realized something terrifying," she whispered to me. "I already feel like she's mine. Like she belongs to me. Like I have a right to her. And I know that's exactly the mindset that made my mother so controlling, so enmeshed with me. But how do I not feel this way? She came from my body. I'm nursing her. I'm responsible for keeping her alive. How am I supposed to hold her loosely when everything in me wants to hold her tightly?"

Rebecca had stumbled onto one of the deepest tensions in Christian parenting: the call to steward what we're tempted to own, to love deeply while releasing fully, to pour ourselves into someone we're preparing to let go.

This isn't just a psychological challenge—it's a theological one. Getting the theology of parent-child relationships right is foundational to everything else in this book. If we misunderstand what God intends the parent-child relationship to be, we'll inevitably slip into patterns that either smother or neglect, control or abandon.

This chapter will establish the biblical framework for healthy parent-child relationships—relationships that are deeply loving but not enmeshed,

committed but not controlling, intimate but properly boundaried. We'll explore what Scripture actually teaches about the parent-child bond, and why understanding God's design is essential for breaking co-dependent patterns.

You're a Steward, Not an Owner: Your Children Belong to God

Let's start with the most fundamental shift in thinking: Your children are not yours. They're God's.

This is radical in a culture that refers to "my child" with a possessive sense of ownership. We speak of children as if they're extensions of ourselves, as if they exist for our fulfillment, as if we have ultimate rights over their lives.

But Scripture presents a different picture. Look at how Hannah understood her relationship with Samuel:

"For this boy I prayed, and the Lord has given me my petition which I asked of Him. So I have also dedicated him to the Lord; as long as he lives he is dedicated to the Lord."

—1 Samuel 1:27-28 (NASB)

Notice the progression in Hannah's language:

1. "For this boy I prayed" — She asked God for him
2. "The Lord has given me my petition" — She acknowledges God as the giver
3. "I have also dedicated him to the Lord" — She returns him to his rightful owner
4. "As long as he lives he is dedicated to the Lord" — She recognizes his ultimate belonging

Hannah received her son as a gift, but she never confused receiving with owning. She knew Samuel came from God and belonged to God. Her role was stewardship, not ownership.

This is the biblical model for all parenting. As Psalm 127:3 declares, "Behold, children are a gift of the Lord, the fruit of the womb is a reward" (NASB). Gifts are received, stewarded, and held with open hands—not grasped, controlled, or possessed.

Timothy Keller writes in *The Meaning of Marriage*: "You are not your own—you've been bought with a price. And that means you don't get to live for yourself anymore. The Christian life is about sacrifice and service." If this is true for us (and Scripture declares it is), it's equally true for our children. They are not their own. They don't belong to us. They belong to the One who knit them together in the womb.

What Stewardship Means Practically

If we're stewards rather than owners, what does that change?

1. We recognize our accountability to God Owners do what they want with their possessions. Stewards must give an account to the true owner. When we see ourselves as stewards of our children, we parent with an awareness that we'll answer to God for how we've shepherded His children.

This should humble us: "These aren't mine to damage. These belong to God. I must handle them carefully, according to His instructions, not my own preferences."

2. We respect their distinct identity and calling You don't get to determine who your child becomes. God already did that. Your child has a unique design, personality, gifting, and calling that existed before you started parenting and will continue after your parenting role shifts.

Your job isn't to mold them into your image or your unfulfilled dreams. Your job is to discover who God made them to be and steward that design faithfully.

John Piper notes: "One of the great uses of Twitter and Facebook will be to prove at the Last Day that prayerlessness was not from lack of time." We

could apply this principle to parenting: one of the great evidences of co-dependency will be to prove that we spent more time imposing our will on our children than discovering God's design in them.

3. We hold loosely rather than grasping tightly Owners grasp. Stewards hold. There's a profound difference.

When you grasp your children—trying to control their choices, their friendships, their futures—you communicate that they're yours to control. When you hold them—with love, attention, guidance, and open hands—you communicate that they're precious but not possessed.

4. We prepare them for their true relationship—with their Heavenly Father
Your ultimate goal as a parent is not to make your children dependent on you, but to prepare them for dependence on God. You're not their savior, their source, or their security. God is.

Elisabeth Elliot wrote: "The fact that I am a woman does not make me a different kind of Christian, but the fact that I am a Christian does make me a different kind of woman." Similarly, the fact that you're a parent doesn't change your primary identity—child of God. And the fact that your children are your children doesn't change their primary identity—children of God.

You're both God's children. You're temporarily in an authority relationship, but ultimately you're siblings in Christ. This keeps parenting properly humble.

The Freedom of Not Owning

Here's the paradox: when you release ownership, you actually become a better parent.

Why? Because ownership creates anxiety. If your children are yours, then their failures are your failures. Their choices reflect on you. Their outcomes determine your success or failure. You have to control them because their lives are about you.

But stewardship creates peace. If your children belong to God, then:

- **Their failures are opportunities for them to learn (and for you to guide with compassion)**
- **Their choices are theirs to make (within age-appropriate boundaries)**
- **Their outcomes are ultimately in God's hands, not yours**
- **You're freed to guide rather than control, to influence rather than manipulate**

Rebecca, the new mother from the beginning of this chapter, discovered this freedom when her daughter was about six months old. "I was having so much anxiety about every little thing—is she eating enough, is she developing normally, am I doing everything right? One night I couldn't sleep, and I finally prayed, 'God, she's Yours. I can't control all of this. I need You to help me trust that You love her more than I do and You're sovereign over her life.' Something shifted. I still care deeply, but I'm not frantic anymore. She's not mine to save or perfect. She's His to raise, and I get to partner with Him in that."

This is the peace that comes with stewardship.

The Arc of Parenting: From Total Dependence to Healthy Independence

God designed human development with a clear trajectory: children begin in complete dependence and are meant to grow toward healthy independence. This isn't a flaw in the design—it's the point of the design.

Consider how Jesus grew:

"And Jesus kept increasing in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and men."

—Luke 2:52 (NASB)

Jesus had a developmental process. He increased—grew, matured, developed—in four dimensions:

- 1. Wisdom (intellectual/mental development)**

- 2. Stature (physical development)**
- 3. Favor with God (spiritual development)**
- 4. Favor with men (social/relational development)**

Notice what's absent: dependence on Mary and Joseph as a permanent state. By age 12, Jesus was already asserting His primary relationship with His Father (Luke 2:49). By age 30, He was launched into independent adult ministry. Mary had to learn—sometimes painfully—to release Him to His calling.

This is the biblical pattern: Parenting is a process of gradually decreasing control and increasing influence, moving from managing a child's life to mentoring an adult's journey.

The Developmental Arc

Let's break down what this arc looks like practically:

Infancy (0-2 years): Total Dependence

- Children are completely dependent on parents for physical survival**
- Parents must provide food, warmth, safety, comfort, attachment**
- The primary task: building secure attachment through responsive care**
- Co-dependent danger zone: Making the child's dependence about your need to be needed**

Early Childhood (3-5 years): Learning Independence

- Children begin learning self-care (toileting, dressing, feeding themselves)**
- They're developing language, preferences, and early autonomy**
- The primary task: Teaching basic skills while maintaining secure attachment**

- **Co-dependent danger zone: Doing for them what they can do for themselves; squelching their "No!" phase instead of channeling it**

Middle Childhood (6-11 years): Expanding Independence

- **Children develop competence in many areas (academic, social, practical)**
- **They begin having significant relationships and activities outside the family**
- **The primary task: Teaching decision-making skills, problem-solving, emotional regulation**
- **Co-dependent danger zone: Helicopter parenting; making their problems your problems; needing them to be your companion**

Adolescence (12-18 years): Practicing Independence

- **Teenagers are developmentally designed to individuate—separate their identity from parents**
- **They're preparing for adult roles through increasingly independent decision-making**
- **The primary task: Being a consultant rather than manager; allowing natural consequences; maintaining relationship while releasing control**
- **Co-dependent danger zone: Taking their individuation personally; controlling through guilt or manipulation; making their choices about your emotions**

Young Adulthood (18+): Launched Independence

- **Adult children are responsible for their own lives, choices, and consequences**
- **Parents shift to peer relationships with appropriate boundaries**

- **The primary task: Relating as adults; offering wisdom when asked; respecting their autonomy**
- **Co-dependent danger zone: Continuing to manage their lives; bailing them out; making their problems your problems; requiring enmeshed closeness**

Paul David Tripp observes: "Parenting is progressively giving your children back to God. It's a long and sometimes painful journey of letting go." Each stage requires letting go of the previous stage's level of control. This is by design. God structured development this way to move children toward maturity.

The Goal: Healthy Independence, Not Isolation

An important clarification: independence doesn't mean disconnection. We're not aiming to raise children who don't need anyone. We're aiming to raise children who:

- **Can function independently (practical autonomy)**
- **Take responsibility for their own emotions, choices, and lives (emotional autonomy)**
- **Choose relationship rather than needing it for survival (relational freedom)**
- **Maintain connection without enmeshment (healthy interdependence)**

The goal is differentiation—knowing where you end and they begin—not isolation. Biblical community involves mutual support, but not co-dependent fusion.

Think about Jesus and His disciples. He prepared them intensively for three years, but His goal was always their independent functioning after His departure. He said, "It is to your advantage that I go away" (John 16:7,

NASB). He knew they needed to learn to depend on the Father and the Holy Spirit, not on His physical presence.

This is the parent's task: to make yourself progressively less necessary while remaining consistently available. To move from being needed for survival to being chosen for relationship.

Honor Without Enmeshment: The Fifth Commandment Rightly Understood

One of the most misused scriptures in co-dependent family systems is the fifth commandment:

"Honor your father and your mother, that your days may be prolonged in the land which the Lord your God gives you."

—Exodus 20:12 (NASB)

This commandment is often wielded as a weapon to demand compliance, squelch independence, or maintain enmeshment. Adult children are told they're violating this commandment if they:

- **Set boundaries with parents**
- **Move away geographically**
- **Make choices parents disapprove of**
- **Don't share everything with parents**
- **Prioritize their spouse or children over parents**

But this interpretation distorts what "honor" means biblically.

What "Honor" Actually Means

The Hebrew word for "honor" (*kaved*) literally means "to be heavy, weighty, to give weight to." It's about treating someone as significant, showing respect, and recognizing their position—not about obedience, enmeshment, or meeting all their emotional needs.

Consider what the commandment does NOT say:

- It doesn't say "obey your father and mother" (that command is for children, not adults—Ephesians 6:1 specifies "children, obey your parents")
- It doesn't say "never disappoint your parents"
- It doesn't say "make your parents happy"
- It doesn't say "have no boundaries with your parents"
- It doesn't say "let your parents control your adult life"

Honor means:

- Speaking respectfully, even in disagreement
- Caring for aging parents' legitimate needs (1 Timothy 5:4)
- Recognizing the position they hold in your life
- Expressing gratitude for what they've provided
- Not slandering or dishonoring them publicly

But honor does NOT require:

- Tolerating abuse or destructive behavior
- Sacrificing your marriage or children to please parents
- Having no boundaries or privacy
- Accepting parental control in adulthood
- Staying enmeshed

Jesus' Model of Honor Without Enmeshment

**Jesus perfectly honored His mother without being enmeshed with her.
Consider these examples:**

Luke 2:41-52 — At age 12, Jesus stayed in Jerusalem When Mary and Joseph found Him, she said, "Son, why have You treated us this way? Behold, Your father and I have been anxiously looking for You."

Jesus' response: "Why is it that you were looking for Me? Did you not know that I had to be in My Father's house?"

He honored her by explaining (He didn't just dismiss her), but He didn't let her anxiety control Him. He was already clear about His primary relationship being with His Heavenly Father.

John 2:1-11 — The wedding at Cana Mary told Jesus, "They have no wine."

Jesus responded, "Woman, what does that have to do with us? My hour has not yet come."

He called her "woman" (a respectful term, but not "mother"), established a boundary about His timing and mission, but then ultimately chose to help. He honored her without being controlled by her.

John 19:26-27 — From the cross "When Jesus then saw His mother, and the disciple whom He loved standing nearby, He said to His mother, 'Woman, behold, your son!' Then He said to the disciple, 'Behold, your mother!'"

Even in His dying moments, Jesus made provision for His mother's care. This is honor. But notice: He didn't say, "John, you must do whatever she says" or "Mother, John will never leave you." He provided for her practical needs while maintaining appropriate boundaries.

Throughout His ministry, Jesus maintained loving relationship with Mary without being enmeshed. When she showed up expecting to see Him, He said, "Who is My mother and who are My brothers?" and pointed to His disciples (Matthew 12:48-50). He was redefining family around spiritual relationship, not biological enmeshment.

This is the model: love, respect, care—but also clear boundaries, separate identity, and primary allegiance to the Father.

Dietrich Bonhoeffer wrote in *The Cost of Discipleship*: "When Christ calls a man, he bids him come and die." This includes dying to enmeshed family systems. Jesus said, "If anyone comes to Me, and does not hate his own

father and mother and wife and children and brothers and sisters, yes, and even his own life, he cannot be My disciple" (Luke 14:26, NASB). This hyperbolic language means: if you won't choose Me over even your closest relationships, you can't follow Me.

This isn't about cruelty to family—it's about proper ordering of loves. God first, then family in proper position, without enmeshment or idolatry.

Teaching Your Children to Honor You Without Enmeshment

As you raise your children, you want to teach them what healthy honor looks like—not enmeshed obedience, but respectful relationship with boundaries.

This means:

- **When they're children, you require respectful speech and behavior (age-appropriate obedience)**
- **As they grow, you teach them to disagree respectfully rather than requiring agreement**
- **You model boundaries in your relationship with your own parents so they see what honor-with-boundaries looks like**
- **You release them to make their own choices as young adults, even when you disagree**
- **You never use guilt, manipulation, or scripture-twisting to maintain control**
- **You celebrate their independence rather than mourning their separation**

You're teaching them that honor doesn't mean enmeshment. You can honor someone while having separate opinions, separate lives, and healthy boundaries.

This breaks the co-dependent cycle. Your children learn they can love you, respect you, and have their own lives—without guilt.

Your Job Is to Work Yourself Out of a Job

This may be the most countercultural, counterintuitive aspect of biblical parenting: The measure of success is not how much your children need you, but how well they function without you.

In co-dependent family systems, parents are successful when children remain dependent:

- **"My 30-year-old calls me every day! We're so close!"**
- **"My daughter can't make any major decision without me!"**
- **"My son lives three blocks away and comes over every evening!"**

These may be signs of enmeshment, not health. While close family relationships are beautiful, if they're characterized by dependence rather than choice, they're not healthy.

God's design is different. Consider how God parents:

He provides for us completely when we're spiritually immature (like a baby Christian—1 Corinthians 3:1-2)

He teaches us and trains us (Hebrews 12:5-11)

He allows us to experience consequences (Galatians 6:7)

He gives us increasing responsibility and freedom (the progression from servant to friend—John 15:15)

He releases us to walk independently with Him (Philippians 2:12, "work out your salvation")

But He remains available, present, and in relationship (Hebrews 13:5, "I will never leave you")

This is the pattern: progressive release while remaining in relationship. God isn't threatened by our maturity. He doesn't need us to stay dependent. He delights in our growth toward Christlikeness and independent walking with Him.

What Working Yourself Out of a Job Looks Like

At each stage, you're systematically transferring responsibility from yourself to your child:

Toddlerhood:

- **You do everything for them initially**
- **You begin teaching: "Let's do this together"**
- **You start releasing: "You try while I watch"**
- **Eventually: "You do it, I'm here if you need help"**

Childhood:

- **You make all the decisions, then explain your reasoning**
- **You start giving choices: "Would you like A or B?"**
- **You transfer decisions in low-stakes areas: "You decide about this"**
- **You let them experience natural consequences: "That was your choice; what did you learn?"**

Adolescence:

- **You're consulting rather than deciding: "What do you think you should do?"**
- **You're discussing rather than dictating: "Here's my perspective; what's yours?"**
- **You're allowing significant independence with oversight: "You make the plan; I'll review it"**
- **You're stepping back dramatically: "This is your choice; I trust you"**

Young Adulthood:

- **You're offering wisdom only when asked**
- **You're relating as peers with appropriate boundaries**

- You're watching them succeed and fail without intervening
- You're celebrating their independence rather than mourning it

At each transition, you're asking: "What am I still doing that they could be doing themselves? What am I still controlling that they could be choosing for themselves? Where am I still managing that I should be mentoring?"

C.S. Lewis wrote: "Love anything and your heart will be wrung and possibly broken. If you want to make sure of keeping it intact you must give it to no one, not even an animal." Parenting requires this kind of love—the love that gives your heart away, knowing it will be "wrung" as you release your children. But it's the only way to love well.

The Paradox: Release Leads to Relationship

Here's what co-dependent parents fear: *If I stop being needed, I'll lose relationship. If I let them go, they'll leave and never come back. My value is in being necessary.*

But the opposite is true. Research on adult children consistently shows:

- Adults who were released well *choose* relationship with parents
- Adults who felt controlled or enmeshed often distance themselves once they're free to do so
- Adults who feel guilty about their independence resent parents even while complying
- Adults who were trusted and released tend to maintain closer, healthier relationships

When you work yourself out of a job, you don't lose relationship—you gain a different kind of relationship. One based on choice, not need. Based on love, not obligation. Based on mutual respect, not control.

John Piper writes: "God is most glorified in us when we are most satisfied in him." Apply this to parenting: You are most glorified as a parent when

your children are most satisfied in their independent relationship with God—not when they're most dependent on you.

Your goal is not to make them need you forever. Your goal is to raise them so well that they can stand on their own, walk with God, and choose to remain in relationship with you because they want to, not because they have to.

Defining Your Parenting Mission: Practical Application

Understanding the theology is essential, but you need to translate it into a practical parenting mission. What are you actually trying to accomplish? What's your goal?

Without a clear mission, you'll default to either what your parents did or anxious reactivity to each situation. With a clear mission, you have a north star to guide your decisions.

Mission Statement Exercise

Take time to write a parenting mission statement. This should be:

- **Biblical (rooted in Scripture and God's design)**
- **Specific to your family (reflecting your values and calling)**
- **Child-centered (focused on who they're becoming, not what makes you comfortable)**
- **Release-oriented (acknowledging the goal of launch)**

Here are some examples:

Example 1: "Our mission is to steward our children as gifts from God, raising them to know Jesus personally, to walk in their unique callings, and to love God and others well. We're preparing them for independent lives where they depend on God, not on us. Success is measured not by their compliance but by their character, not by their closeness to us but by their closeness to Christ."

Example 2: "We're raising our children to be emotionally healthy, spiritually grounded, and practically capable adults. We want them to know they're loved for who they are, not what they achieve. We're working to prepare them for lives of purpose and service, released to pursue God's calling wherever He leads. Our job is to build a foundation and then step back to let them build their own lives on it."

Example 3: "We're stewarding these three lives on loan from God. Our goal is to love them toward maturity—spiritually, emotionally, and practically. We want to give them roots (identity in Christ, family values, secure attachment) and wings (confidence, capability, freedom to fly). We measure success not by how much they need us, but by how well they're equipped to walk with God independently."

Now write yours:

Our Parenting Mission:

[Space for reader to write]

Questions to Guide Your Mission:

- **Who do you want your children to be at age 30? What character qualities? What relationship with God? What capability?**
- **What do you want them to know about themselves? About God? About relationships?**
- **What do you want them to be free from? (Guilt, people-pleasing, co-dependency, fear)**
- **What skills, knowledge, and character do they need to function independently?**
- **How do you want them to look back on their childhood? What do you want them to say about how you parented?**

Creating a "Launch Plan" Vision

Beyond a general mission, it's helpful to have a specific vision for launch—what "ready to leave home" looks like. This helps you parent backward from that goal.

Launch Readiness Checklist

By the time your child leaves home (around 18-22, depending on circumstances), they should be able to:

Practically:

- **Manage their own schedule and responsibilities without reminders**
- **Cook basic meals**
- **Do laundry and basic household tasks**
- **Manage money (budget, bank account, avoid debt)**
- **Navigate basic bureaucracy (appointments, paperwork, phone calls)**
- **Maintain a vehicle or use public transportation**
- **Practice basic health care (know when to see a doctor, manage medications)**

Emotionally:

- **Identify and express their feelings**
- **Self-soothe and regulate emotions without depending on others**
- **Handle disappointment and failure without falling apart**
- **Maintain relationships with conflict resolution skills**
- **Set and maintain boundaries**
- **Ask for help when needed without shame**

Spiritually:

- **Have a personal relationship with God, not just inherited faith**

- Engage in spiritual disciplines independently (prayer, Scripture, worship)
- Know how to find and connect with healthy Christian community
- Understand their identity in Christ
- Be able to discern truth and navigate spiritual questions

Relationally:

- Form healthy friendships
- Maintain appropriate boundaries
- Handle conflict respectfully
- Not need parental approval for every decision
- Choose relationship with family rather than needing it for survival
- Be able to both receive and offer help in community

Decision-Making:

- Weigh options and make decisions
- Consider consequences before acting
- Live with the results of their choices
- Learn from mistakes without excessive shame
- Seek counsel when needed but ultimately decide themselves

As you look at this list, you may feel overwhelmed. "My teenager can't do most of this!" That's okay—that's what the next few years are for. Use this as a guide for what to be teaching and releasing now.

Backward Planning

For each item on the list, ask: "When should they start learning this? How can I teach it? When can I release it to them?"

Example: Skill: Managing their own schedule

- **Elementary: Use a visual chart together**
- **Middle School: Start using a planner with your oversight**
- **High School: Full responsibility with natural consequences if they forget**

Skill: Emotional regulation

- **Toddler: Name emotions; model calming strategies**
- **Elementary: Teach specific coping skills; create a calm-down space**
- **Middle School: Let them manage most upset feelings independently; check in after**
- **High School: Full responsibility for their emotions; you're available but not managing**

For each skill, you're progressively releasing responsibility from yourself to them.

Prayer of Surrender Over Your Children

Finally, the spiritual discipline that makes all of this possible: regularly surrendering your children to God.

This isn't a one-time prayer. It's an ongoing practice because you'll constantly be tempted to take back control, to grasp instead of hold, to cling instead of release.

Hannah's prayer in 1 Samuel 1:27-28 is the model: "For this boy I prayed...So I have also dedicated him to the Lord; as long as he lives he is dedicated to the Lord."

Daily Surrender Practice

Consider making this a daily practice (you might do it during your morning prayer time or at night):

Step 1: Acknowledge God's ownership "Father, [child's name] is Yours. You knit them together. You have plans for them. You love them more than I ever could. They belong to You, not to me."

Step 2: Release your grasp "I release my grip on [specific area you're tempted to control]. I release my need to [manage their feelings/control their choices/ensure their success/keep them safe from all struggle]. I trust You with this."

Step 3: Ask for stewardship grace "Help me steward [child's name] faithfully today. Give me wisdom to know when to step in and when to step back. Help me love them without enmeshment, guide them without controlling, and release them with trust."

Step 4: Trust God's faithfulness "I trust that You will complete the work You began in [child's name]. I trust Your love for them. I trust Your plan for them. I rest in Your sovereignty."

Specific Surrender Prayers

You might also need to pray specifically about areas where you're struggling:

When you're anxious about their choices: "God, I'm so worried about [specific situation]. But I know my worry doesn't help and my control won't work. I surrender this situation to You. Help me to state my concerns clearly, set appropriate boundaries, and then trust You with the outcome."

When you're struggling with their independence: "Father, it's so hard to watch them not need me anymore. I feel like I'm losing them. Help me understand that release isn't loss—it's the goal. Help me celebrate their independence instead of mourning it. Fill the space they're leaving with Your presence and purpose."

When you've slipped into control: "I tried to control this situation. I over-functioned. I made it about me instead of about them. Forgive me. Help

me repair with [child's name]. Give me courage to step back and trust them—and trust You."

When facing launch: "God, they're leaving soon and I'm terrified. Have I done enough? Have I prepared them? Will they be okay? Quiet my anxious heart. Remind me that You're going with them, that You're faithful, and that my job is to release them with blessing, not hold them with fear."

Augustine prayed: "Our hearts are restless until they rest in You." Our parenting hearts are restless when we're carrying what only God can carry. Release brings rest.

A Vision for the Future: What Successful Launch Looks Like

Let me paint a picture of what you're working toward—not to overwhelm you, but to give you hope.

Imagine your child at 25:

They're living independently—working, serving, building relationships. They call you because they want to, not because they have to. They ask your advice sometimes, but they make their own decisions. They tell you about their struggles, but they're not looking for you to fix everything.

When they come home for holidays, you enjoy their company as adults. There's laughter, depth of conversation, mutual respect. They have their own lives that don't revolve around you, and you have your own life that doesn't revolve around them.

They've made choices you wouldn't have made. They've experienced failures and grown from them. They've found their own path with God—maybe similar to yours, maybe different, but authentic and real.

They're emotionally healthy—able to have hard conversations, set boundaries, manage their feelings, build healthy relationships. They don't

people-please. They don't carry responsibility for others' emotions. They know their worth in Christ.

When they think back on their childhood, they feel grateful. Not because it was perfect, but because you loved them well, you gave them room to grow, you believed in them, and you released them with blessing.

And you? You're filled with joy—not the anxious pseudo-joy of enmeshment, but the deep satisfaction of a job well done. You released them and they're soaring. You worked yourself out of a job, and the result is a beautiful adult relationship based on choice, not need.

This is what you're working toward. This is what biblical parenting produces. This is the fruit of parenting from freedom rather than from co-dependency.

It's possible. God will help you. You're not too far behind. Your past doesn't disqualify you. Your children's current age doesn't mean it's too late.

Start now. Parent with the end in mind. Hold loosely. Love deeply. Release freely.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- **Your children belong to God, not to you. You're a steward, not an owner, which changes everything about how you parent**
- **God designed development as a progression from total dependence to healthy independence—this is the plan, not a flaw**
- **"Honor your father and mother" means respect, not enmeshment. Jesus modeled honor with boundaries**
- **Your job is to work yourself out of a job—preparing your children to function independently while choosing relationship**

- **Parenting with a clear mission and launch plan helps you parent intentionally toward freedom**

Remember: Letting go isn't losing. Releasing isn't abandoning. Preparing them to leave is loving them well. The tighter you grasp, the more likely they'll flee. The more freely you release, the more likely they'll return.

Action Steps This Week:

- 1. Write your parenting mission statement**
- 2. Create a launch readiness assessment for each child—where are they now? What needs development?**
- 3. Identify one area where you're owning instead of stewarding—confess it to God and commit to change**
- 4. Begin the daily practice of surrender prayer over your children**
- 5. Have a conversation with your spouse or co-parent (if applicable) about your shared vision for parenting toward launch**

Reflection Questions:

- 1. How do you struggle with "owning" rather than "stewarding" your children? What makes it hard to hold loosely?**
- 2. Looking at the developmental arc, where are you ahead (releasing appropriately) and where are you behind (still controlling or over-functioning)?**
- 3. How was the fifth commandment ("honor your father and mother") used in your family growing up? How might you need to understand it differently?**
- 4. What scares you most about "working yourself out of a job"? What specific fears come up when you think about your children not needing you?**

**5. What does "launch readiness" look like for your specific children?
What areas need the most focus in the coming years?**

Closing Prayer:

Heavenly Father, these children are Yours. You knit them together, You have plans for them, You love them more than I can fathom. Forgive me for the ways I've grasped instead of held, owned instead of stewarded, controlled instead of released. Help me see them as You see them—as Your beloved children whom I have the privilege of raising for a season. Give me wisdom to prepare them for independence, courage to let them go, and trust that You'll go with them. Teach me to work myself out of a job so that they can walk freely with You. I surrender them to You today and ask for grace to do it again tomorrow. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"Trust in the Lord with all your heart and do not lean on your own understanding. In all your ways acknowledge Him, and He will make your paths straight."

—Proverbs 3:5-6 (NASB)

PART TWO: AGE-APPROPRIATE WISDOM

Raising Free Children Through Each Stage

CHAPTER 4

Toddlers and Preschoolers (Ages 1-5): Laying the Foundation of Security and Autonomy

"And He called a child to Himself and set him before them, and said, 'Truly I say to you, unless you are converted and become like children, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven. Whoever then humbles himself as this child, he is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.'"

—Matthew 18:3-4 (NASB)

Emma watched her 18-month-old daughter, Lily, struggle to put on her shoes. For three minutes, Lily tried to force her foot into the shoe while it was on the wrong foot. Emma's hands twitched. Every instinct told her to reach over and fix it—to save Lily from the frustration, to make it easier, to help.

"Why aren't you helping her?" her mother asked from across the room.

"Because she can figure it out," Emma said, though her voice wavered with uncertainty.

"That's cruel," her mother replied. "She's getting upset. Why would you let her struggle when you could just fix it in two seconds?"

Emma felt the familiar guilt rising. Was she being cruel? Was she a bad mother for letting her daughter be frustrated? Or was she doing something important—teaching Lily that she's capable, that struggle isn't dangerous, that problems can be solved?

This moment captures the central tension of parenting toddlers and preschoolers: How do you provide the security young children need while

simultaneously fostering the autonomy they're developmentally designed to develop?

The early years (ages 1-5) are foundational. During this season, children are learning whether the world is safe, whether they're capable, whether their feelings are acceptable, and whether they can trust the adults around them. The patterns established now create neural pathways and relational templates that will shape their entire lives.

This is both sobering and hopeful. It's sobering because it matters deeply how you parent during these years. It's hopeful because you have the opportunity to give your children something you may not have received: a foundation of both security and freedom.

This chapter will show you how to build that foundation without slipping into co-dependent patterns. We'll explore how to meet your young child's needs without creating unhealthy dependence, how to begin teaching boundaries from the earliest ages, and how to lay groundwork for the emotionally healthy, boundaried adult they'll one day become.

Secure Attachment vs. Anxious Attachment: Meeting Needs Without Creating Dependence

The most important task of the early years is establishing secure attachment. This isn't optional or merely beneficial—it's foundational to all healthy human development. Decades of research, beginning with John Bowlby and Mary Ainsworth, have shown that secure attachment is the platform from which children explore the world, develop autonomy, and eventually individuate.

But here's where it gets tricky for those of us recovering from co-dependency: Secure attachment looks similar to enmeshment on the surface, but the underlying dynamic is completely different.

What Secure Attachment Actually Is

Secure attachment develops when a child learns that:

- Their caregiver is consistently available and responsive
- Their needs will be met reliably
- The world is generally safe
- They can venture out and explore, knowing their caregiver is a "secure base" to return to
- Their emotions are acceptable and will be received with comfort (not alarm or dismissal)

The securely attached child thinks: *"My parent is here when I need them, so I can explore. When I'm scared or hurt, they'll help me. When I'm upset, they'll comfort me. I'm safe."*

This creates a paradox that confounds those who equate attachment with dependence: Secure attachment actually produces autonomy. The child who knows their parent is reliably there feels safe enough to explore, try new things, and gradually separate. The child who isn't sure if their parent will be there clings anxiously or detaches defensively.

Dr. Dan Siegel writes: "The child's development of a coherent sense of self depends upon experiencing co-regulation with an attuned caregiver." Attunement isn't enmeshment—it's the parent reading and responding to the child's needs appropriately.

What Anxious Attachment Looks Like

Anxious attachment develops when the parent's availability is inconsistent, overwhelming, or dependent on the child's behavior. There are several types:

Anxious-Avoidant Attachment: The parent is emotionally distant, dismissive of emotions, or unavailable. The child learns: *"My needs won't be met, so I shouldn't have them. I have to be self-sufficient."*

This often happens when parents are overwhelmed, depressed, distracted, or believe that meeting emotional needs will "spoil" the child.

Anxious-Ambivalent (or Anxious-Resistant) Attachment: The parent is inconsistently available—sometimes responsive, sometimes not—often depending on the parent's mood or needs. The child learns: *"I can't predict if my needs will be met. I must constantly check. I can't venture out safely."*

This is common in co-dependent families where the parent's availability depends on their own emotional state.

Disorganized Attachment: The parent is frightening, abusive, or severely dysregulated. The child learns: *"My source of safety is also my source of danger. There's no way to feel secure."*

This is the most damaging pattern and typically requires professional intervention.

The Co-Dependent Parent's Dilemma

Here's the confusion: co-dependent parents often believe they're creating secure attachment when they're actually creating anxious attachment. Why?

Because co-dependent parents often:

- Meet the child's needs to meet their own needs (needing to be needed)
- Over-respond to the child's distress (making the child's feelings about them)
- Prevent all struggle (unable to tolerate the child's discomfort)
- Use the child for emotional regulation (feeling better when the child is happy)

This looks like attentiveness, but it's actually enmeshment. The child learns: *"My parent needs me to be happy/compliant/easy so they can be okay. My job is to regulate them."*

Securely attached children explore and return. Anxiously attached children either avoid (having given up on connection) or cling (never feeling safe enough to explore).

How to Build Secure Attachment Without Enmeshment

1. Be consistently responsive to genuine needs

Genuine needs of toddlers/preschoolers:

- **Physical care (food, sleep, hygiene, safety)**
- **Comfort when hurt or frightened**
- **Help with tasks they cannot yet do**
- **Emotional co-regulation (helping them calm down when overwhelmed)**
- **Connection and affection**
- **Age-appropriate boundaries and structure**

What are NOT genuine needs:

- **Never experiencing frustration**
- **Having every preference met immediately**
- **Being entertained constantly**
- **Having all problems solved by you**
- **Being protected from all consequences**

Meet actual needs promptly and warmly. But don't confuse preferences with needs, and don't jump in to "fix" normal developmental challenges.

2. Respond to emotions without taking ownership of them

When your toddler is upset:

Secure attachment response: "You're really frustrated! It's hard when the blocks fall down. I'm here if you need a hug. You can try again when you're ready."

Enmeshed response: "Oh no! You're upset! Let me fix it! Don't be sad! Here, Mommy will build it for you. There, all better! You're happy now, right?"

See the difference? The first acknowledges the emotion, offers comfort, and trusts the child to process. The second takes ownership of the emotion, needs the child to feel better, and solves the problem to relieve the parent's discomfort.

3. Comfort without rescuing

Your role is to be a safe harbor during emotional storms, not to prevent all storms or calm them instantly.

When your three-year-old is having a meltdown because they can't have a cookie before dinner:

Secure attachment: "You're really angry. You wanted that cookie! It's hard to wait. I'm going to sit right here while you're upset. Dinner is in 20 minutes."

(You sit calmly nearby, not alarmed by their emotion, not trying to make it stop, just present.)

Enmeshed: "Oh, baby, don't cry! Okay, just one cookie. I can't stand when you're this upset! Please stop crying. Here, let's go watch something to help you feel better."

(Your distress about their distress leads you to give in, teaching them that big emotions get them what they want and that their feelings are too much for you to handle.)

4. Encourage exploration and independence

The securely attached child ventures out because they trust their parent will be there when they return. Encourage this:

- **"You can play in the other room. I'll be right here if you need me."**
- **"You try climbing up. I'll spot you but I think you can do it."**
- **"Go ahead and play with those kids. I'll be on this bench watching."**

The goal is: *"I'm available but not hovering. You're safe to explore."*

5. Maintain your own emotional regulation

This is crucial. You cannot co-regulate a child if you're dysregulated yourself. Your toddler's tantrum shouldn't cause your tantrum. Their upset shouldn't make you upset.

If you find yourself becoming dysregulated by your child's emotions, this is a sign of enmeshment. Work on this in your own therapy and with your own coping strategies.

As Paul David Tripp writes: "Your child's greatest need is not a happy life but a changed heart. And that's a work only God can do." You can't control your child's emotional state, nor should you try. Your job is to be a steady, calm presence through their storms.

Teaching "No" Starting Young: Respecting Their Boundaries

One of the most important things you can teach young children is that they have a "no"—and that their "no" matters.

This is radically countercultural and feels dangerous to many parents. We've been trained to believe that children should always obey, always comply, always be agreeable. We worry that teaching them they can say "no" will make them defiant or disrespectful.

But consider what happens when children learn they have no right to say "no":

- **They grow into adults who can't set boundaries**

- They become vulnerable to abuse (if adults can override their "no," any adult can)
- They learn their bodies and feelings don't belong to them
- They become people-pleasers who sacrifice themselves to keep others comfortable
- They develop anxiety and depression from chronic self-abandonment

The child who learns "my no matters" becomes the adult who can set boundaries, resist manipulation, and honor their own limits.

Body Autonomy: The Foundation of Boundary-Setting

Start with the most concrete boundary: their body.

Your toddler's body belongs to them, not to you. This is a biblical principle—they are image-bearers with inherent dignity, not your property. Even at 18 months, you can begin teaching this:

Physical affection: Don't force children to hug or kiss anyone—including relatives, including you.

"Grandma would love a hug goodbye. Would you like to give her a hug?"

If the child says no or hides: "She doesn't want to hug right now. That's okay. [Child's name], can you wave goodbye or give a high-five?"

Never say: "Don't be rude! Give Grandma a hug!" or "That hurts Grandma's feelings when you won't hug her."

Why this matters:

- It teaches that their comfort with physical touch matters more than others' preferences
- It trains them to listen to their own body's signals

- It protects them from predators (who look for children trained to override their own "no")
- It teaches boundaries are normal and acceptable

Other areas of body autonomy:

- Respecting "I don't want my hair brushed right now" (within reason—negotiate rather than override)
- Not forcing them to sit still for extended periods beyond their developmental capacity
- Allowing them to stop eating when they're full (not "three more bites" or forcing them to clean their plate)
- Respecting their need for space ("I see you need some alone time")

The balance: You still have authority. Some things aren't negotiable (car seats, hand-holding in parking lots, medical care). But in areas where safety isn't at stake, practice honoring their bodily autonomy.

Say: "I need to brush your teeth to keep them healthy. You can choose: do you want the blue toothbrush or the red one? And do you want to do it yourself first, or should I do it?"

You're maintaining the boundary (teeth must be brushed) while giving them agency within that boundary.

Teaching Them to Hear and Respect Others' "No"

This is equally important. If your child's "no" matters, so does everyone else's.

When they're playing rough with a sibling or friend: "He said 'stop.' That means you stop immediately. His body is his, and when he says stop, you respect that."

When they want something from you: "I know you want me to play right now. I'm saying no because I need to finish making dinner. Your want is okay, but my no is okay too."

When they're touching someone who doesn't want to be touched: "She moved away when you tried to hug her. That means she doesn't want a hug right now. That's her choice, and we respect it."

This teaches mutual respect—your boundaries matter, and so do others'. Neither person's wants override the other's right to their own body and choices.

Defiance vs. Boundaries: Teaching the Difference

Teaching children they have a "no" is not the same as allowing defiance or disrespect. There's a crucial distinction:

Boundary-setting (appropriate):

- **"I don't want to hug Aunt Carol."**
- **"I'm not hungry right now."**
- **"I want to play alone."**
- **"I don't like when you tickle me."**

Defiance (needs correction):

- **"I'm NOT getting in the car seat!" (when it's time to leave)**
- **"NO!" (screamed disrespectfully at every request)**
- **Hitting, throwing things, or aggressive behavior**
- **Refusing necessary tasks (bedtime, hygiene, etc.)**

The difference? Boundaries are about their own body, feelings, and preferences in negotiable areas. Defiance is refusing to respect your authority in non-negotiable areas.

How to respond:

To boundary-setting: "I hear you. You don't want to hug. That's your choice. What would you like to do instead to say goodbye?"

To defiance: "I understand you don't want to get in the car seat. It's not a choice. We need to leave. You can get in yourself, or I'll help you. Which do you choose?"

(Then follow through calmly and consistently.)

You're teaching: *Your feelings and preferences matter, AND there are non-negotiable rules for safety and family functioning. Both are true.*

Tedd Tripp writes in *Shepherding a Child's Heart*: "The issue is not so much what your child does, but why. You cannot be satisfied to squelch the behavior, you must drive the plumb line down to attitudes of heart." The heart issue isn't "does my child always comply immediately?" It's "does my child understand they're a person with agency AND they're under loving authority?"

Age-Appropriate Choices That Build Decision-Making Skills

One of the most powerful ways to prevent co-dependency and build autonomy is to give children age-appropriate choices from very young ages.

Choice-giving does three crucial things:

- 1. Teaches decision-making skills (they practice on low-stakes decisions)**
- 2. Builds confidence (they learn they're capable of choosing)**
- 3. Reduces power struggles (they feel heard and have some control)**

But the key word is "age-appropriate." You're not asking a two-year-old to decide whether to go to the grocery store. You're giving bounded choices within your authority structure.

The 2-3 Option Rule for Toddlers/Preschoolers

At this age, offer 2-3 options, all of which are acceptable to you.

Examples:

Clothing:

- **"Do you want to wear the red shirt or the blue shirt?"**
- **"Do you want to wear your sneakers or your sandals?"**

NOT: "What do you want to wear?" (Too many options; overwhelming and time-consuming)

Food:

- **"For snack, do you want apple slices or crackers?"**
- **"Do you want milk or water with lunch?"**

NOT: "What do you want to eat?" (Opens endless negotiation; teaches that preferences always determine outcomes)

Activities:

- **"We're going outside. Do you want to bring your bike or your ball?"**
- **"It's quiet time. Do you want to color or look at books?"**

Bedtime:

- **"We're reading two books tonight. Which two do you choose?"**
- **"Do you want to brush teeth first or put on pajamas first?"**

What This Teaches

When you consistently offer bounded choices, children learn:

- **"I have a voice and my preferences matter"**
- **"I can make decisions and see the results"**
- **"Sometimes I get what I want; sometimes I don't"**
- **"Some things aren't my choice, and that's okay"**

- **"Decision-making is a normal part of life"**

This creates the neural pathways for healthy decision-making. By the time they're teenagers making much bigger choices, they've been practicing for years.

When NOT to Offer Choices

Don't offer choices when:

- **There is no choice: Don't say "Do you want to get in the car seat?" if leaving is non-negotiable. Say: "It's time to get in the car seat. You can climb in yourself or I can help you. Which do you choose?"**
- **You're exhausted and can't handle negotiation: It's okay to say, "I'm picking today. We're wearing this and eating this." Consistency is ideal, but grace for yourself is important too.**
- **They're already dysregulated: A melting-down three-year-old can't process choices. Move to calm, firm direction: "I'm going to help you. We're doing this now."**
- **Safety is at stake: "We hold hands in parking lots. No choice about that. But you can choose which hand to hold—left or right?"**

Honoring Their Choices (Even When It's Hard)

Once you offer a choice, honor it—even when they choose "wrong."

If you ask, "Do you want to wear a jacket?" and they say no, and then they're cold outside, don't rescue them immediately. Let them experience the natural consequence (being cold) and then offer: "You're cold. Would you like to go get your jacket now?"

This is hard. Every co-dependent instinct in you will want to say, "I TOLD you you'd be cold! Next time listen to me!" or to have brought the jacket "just in case" and forced them into it when they complained.

But natural consequences are one of the most powerful teachers. Your child learns:

- **"My choices have results"**
- **"I can trust my own experience" (I AM cold—next time I'll choose differently)**
- **"My parent isn't going to bail me out of my decisions"**
- **"Mistakes are learning opportunities, not disasters"**

Emotional Coaching Without Emotional Enmeshment

Perhaps the most challenging aspect of parenting toddlers and preschoolers without co-dependency is navigating their big emotions.

Young children are emotional beings. Their prefrontal cortex (the part of the brain that regulates emotion) won't be fully developed until their mid-twenties. They feel everything intensely, and they don't yet have the skills to manage those feelings.

Your job is to help them develop those skills—not by managing their emotions for them, but by coaching them through the process.

What Emotional Coaching Is

Emotional coaching, a concept developed by Dr. John Gottman, involves:

- 1. Noticing the emotion**
- 2. Naming the emotion**
- 3. Validating the emotion (communicating that feelings are okay)**
- 4. Setting limits on behavior while accepting feelings**
- 5. Problem-solving (when appropriate)**

Example: Your three-year-old throws a block because their tower keeps falling.

Emotional coaching response:

- 1. Notice: "I see you're really upset."**

2. Name: "You're frustrated that your tower keeps falling down."
3. Validate: "That IS frustrating! You worked hard on it."
4. Set limits: "It's okay to be frustrated. It's not okay to throw blocks. Blocks are for building."
5. Problem-solve: "What could you try differently? Would you like my help, or do you want to figure it out yourself?"

This teaches: *Feelings are okay. Behavior has limits. Problems can be solved.*

What Emotional Enmeshment Looks Like

Emotional enmeshment happens when you:

- Take ownership of their emotions: "Don't be sad! Mommy will make it better!"
- Can't tolerate their distress: You become upset when they're upset
- Fix problems to make feelings go away: You solve everything so they'll stop being upset
- Make their emotions about you: "When you cry like that, it makes Mommy so sad!"

Enmeshed response to the block tower: "Oh no! You're so upset! Here, let Mommy do it. I'll build it for you so it won't fall. There! See? Now you're happy again! Don't be frustrated, sweetie. Mommy fixed it!"

This teaches: *Your feelings are too big for you to handle. You need me to make them go away. Your emotions affect me. I can't handle your distress.*

Scripts for Emotional Coaching

Anger:

- "You're really angry! Your whole body is showing me you're mad."

- "It's okay to be angry. Everyone feels angry sometimes. It's not okay to hit. Where can you put that angry feeling? Should we go push the wall? Jump? Squeeze play dough?"

Sadness:

- "You're feeling sad. Sad feels heavy, doesn't it?"
- "I'm right here while you're sad. Sometimes we just need to cry for a while. That's okay."
- "Would a hug help? Or do you want to be alone for a bit?"

Fear:

- "You're scared. I see you're worried about [the dark/the dog/whatever]."
- "Let's take a deep breath together. You're safe. I'm right here."
- "What would help you feel braver? A nightlight? Holding your stuffed animal?"

Frustration:

- "This is frustrating! You keep trying and it's not working the way you want."
- "What do you think you could try next?"
- "Sometimes when I'm frustrated, I take a break and come back. Would that help?"

Disappointment:

- "You're disappointed. You really wanted [desired thing] and you can't have it."
- "It's okay to be disappointed. I understand why you're sad about that."

- **"Disappointment is hard. I get disappointed sometimes too. It's a yucky feeling."**

Notice what you're NOT doing:

- **You're not saying "don't feel that way"**
- **You're not fixing the situation to make the feeling go away**
- **You're not becoming upset yourself**
- **You're not making it about you**
- **You're not minimizing ("it's not a big deal")**
- **You're not dismissing ("you're fine")**

The Feelings Chart: A Practical Tool

Consider creating a simple feelings chart with faces showing different emotions. With toddlers and preschoolers, keep it simple:

- **Happy**
- **Sad**
- **Angry**
- **Scared**
- **Frustrated**

Throughout the day, help them identify and name feelings:

- **"You're smiling so big! You look happy!"**
- **"You're crying. I think you might be sad. Is that right?"**
- **"Your fists are tight and your face looks scrunched. Are you angry?"**

By age 4-5, they can start using the chart themselves: "I'm feeling angry right now."

Celebrate emotional literacy: "Good job knowing your feelings! You're learning so much about yourself."

Your Own Emotional Regulation

Here's the hard truth: You cannot emotionally coach your child if you're emotionally dysregulated yourself.

If your toddler's tantrum causes your tantrum, you're enmeshed. If you can't stay calm when they're upset, you're taking ownership of their emotions.

Work on your own regulation:

- **Notice your triggers (what specifically makes you dysregulated?)**
- **Practice self-soothing strategies (deep breathing, stepping away for a moment, prayer, calming self-talk)**
- **Remember that their emotions are not emergencies**
- **Remind yourself: "They're allowed to be upset. I'm allowed to stay calm. Their feelings don't control mine."**

If you find this extremely difficult, work on it in therapy. This is a critical skill for breaking co-dependent patterns.

Henri Nouwen wrote: "The friend who can be silent with us in a moment of despair or confusion, who can stay with us in an hour of grief and bereavement, who can tolerate not knowing, not curing, not healing... that is a friend who cares." Be this kind of friend to your child. Stay with them in their emotions without needing to cure them.

Natural Consequences for Small Choices

One of the most powerful teaching tools for young children is natural consequences—allowing them to experience the results of their choices in safe situations.

This is tremendously difficult for co-dependent parents because it requires you to:

- **Tolerate your child's discomfort**
- **Resist the urge to rescue**
- **Trust that the learning is more valuable than the temporary distress**
- **Separate your child's choices from your worth as a parent**

But natural consequences teach in ways that lectures never can. They teach that choices matter, that actions have results, and that you can survive mistakes.

Age-Appropriate Natural Consequences

For 1-2 year olds:

These are very simple cause-and-effect learnings:

- **Drop food from high chair → Food is gone**
- **Throw toy → Toy is taken away temporarily**
- **Refuse to wear a bib → Shirt gets messy**
- **Pull the cat's tail → Cat runs away**

Your role: Observe, name what happened, offer minimal intervention.

"You dropped your banana. Now it's gone. Do you want more? If you throw it again, I'll know you're done eating."

For 2-3 year olds:

Slightly more complex consequences:

- **Refuse to wear a jacket → Get cold outside**
- **Won't put toys away when asked → Toys are removed for a period of time**
- **Dump out toy bin repeatedly → Lose access to that toy bin for the day**

- **Throw food → Mealtime is over**

Your role: State the limit clearly, follow through calmly, don't rescue. "If you throw your food, I'll know you're done eating and I'll take your plate." (They throw it.) "I see you're done. Meal is over." (Remove plate, even though they'll be hungry later.)

For 3-5 year olds:

More abstract consequences:

- **Refuse to put on shoes when it's time to go → Miss out on the fun activity or be late**
- **Don't put dirty clothes in hamper → Favorite outfit isn't clean when they want to wear it**
- **Rough with a toy → Toy breaks**
- **Won't share at playdate → Friends don't want to play with them**
- **Stay up past bedtime → Are tired and cranky the next day**

Your role: Give advance warning, follow through, discuss the learning afterwards. "If you don't put on your shoes when the timer goes off, we'll be late for the playground and we won't have as much time to play." (Timer goes off, they refuse, you leave late, you stay at playground for less time.) "We had less time because it took a long time to get ready. Tomorrow we can try again."

When NOT to Use Natural Consequences

Natural consequences are only appropriate when:

- **It's safe: Don't let them run into traffic to learn about cars**
- **It's not harmful to others: Don't let them hit to learn that it drives friends away**
- **The consequence is timely enough for them to connect cause and effect: A consequence six weeks later is too removed**

- You can emotionally handle it: If you'll be too anxious or will rescue, choose a different teaching method

When natural consequences aren't appropriate, use logical consequences (consequences you impose that logically connect to the behavior):

- Hitting → Time out from playing
- Won't clean up toys → Lose access to toys for a period
- Running in the house after repeated reminders → Must stay in one room for a while

The Most Important Part: Your Response

The power of natural consequences lies not in the consequence itself, but in your response to it.

DON'T say:

- "I told you so!"
- "See? This is why you should listen to Mommy!"
- "If only you'd done what I said, this wouldn't have happened!"
- "Are you going to listen to me next time?"

These responses make it about you being right and them being wrong. They create shame rather than learning.

DO say:

- "You're cold because you didn't want to wear a jacket. That's frustrating. Would you like to get it now?"
- "Your tower fell because the bottom was wobbly. What could you do differently next time?"
- "You're hungry because you threw your dinner. That's a hard way to learn. Breakfast will be at 7:00 tomorrow."

- **"I see you learned that when you don't put your shoes on quickly, we have less time at the park. That's good information for next time."**

Your tone should be neutral and empathetic, not punitive or triumphant. You're a fellow learner observing cause and effect, not a moral authority proving your rightness.

This is parenting from freedom rather than from ego. You don't need them to learn the lesson to validate you. You trust the process and stay connected to them even as they experience difficulty.

Co-Dependent Traps to Avoid With Young Children

Let's specifically identify the co-dependent patterns that are most common with toddlers and preschoolers, so you can recognize and interrupt them.

Trap #1: Controlling Every Aspect of Their Day

What it looks like:

- **Planning and directing every moment**
- **Not allowing unstructured play or boredom**
- **Constantly entertaining or engaging**
- **Micromanaging how they play, what they wear, what they eat**
- **Always directing activities rather than following their lead**

Why it's co-dependent: This is about your anxiety, your need for control, or your need to be needed. It doesn't allow them to develop autonomy, initiative, or self-direction.

What to do instead:

- **Allow significant unstructured play time daily**
- **Let them be bored sometimes (boredom cultivates creativity)**

- Follow their lead in play: "What would you like to play? You're the boss of this game!"
- Offer choices in multiple areas daily
- Practice saying "You decide" in safe situations

Trap #2: Not Allowing Them to Experience Frustration

What it looks like:

- Jumping in to help before they ask
- Preventing any struggle with challenging tasks
- Doing things for them that they could do (with struggle)
- Becoming anxious when they're frustrated
- Distracting them from difficult emotions

Why it's co-dependent: You can't tolerate their discomfort, which is about your emotional regulation, not their needs. You're robbing them of the opportunity to develop persistence, problem-solving, and frustration tolerance.

What to do instead:

- Let them struggle with safe challenges (puzzles, dressing, eating)
- Use phrases like: "That's tricky! I think you can figure it out. I'm here if you need help."
- Wait for them to ask for help rather than offering it unsolicited
- Validate frustration without rescuing: "That IS hard! You're working so hard at it."
- Count slowly to 20 before intervening in a struggle

Trap #3: Making Your Mood Dependent on Their Behavior

What it looks like:

- You're cheerful when they're compliant, upset when they're difficult
- Your whole day is "good" or "bad" based on how they behaved
- You say things like "You're making Mommy so sad" or "When you act like this, it ruins Mommy's day"
- You can't enjoy anything if they're unhappy
- You need them to be in a good mood for you to be in a good mood

Why it's co-dependent: This makes them responsible for your emotional state. It teaches them that their behavior and emotions control yours, which is the foundation of co-dependency.

What to do instead:

- Manage your own emotions regardless of their behavior
- Say: "I'm frustrated with this situation, but I'm working on staying calm"
- Have adult sources of emotional fulfillment (spouse, friends, hobbies)
- Remember they're children learning and growing, not performing for you
- Practice emotional separation: "They're having a hard day. I can stay steady."

Trap #4: Comparing Them to Other Children

What it looks like:

- "Why can't you be more like your sister?"
- "Emma's son is already potty trained and he's younger than you"
- Anxiety about developmental milestones based on what other kids are doing
- Feeling shame when your child isn't "advanced"

- **Competing with other parents through your children**

Why it's co-dependent: This makes their development about your worth rather than their unique journey. It puts performance pressure on them from the earliest ages and teaches them their value is comparative.

What to do instead:

- **Celebrate their unique timeline: "Everyone learns things when they're ready"**
- **Refuse comparison conversations with other parents**
- **Say: "You're becoming exactly who God made you to be"**
- **Focus on growth, not comparison: "Look how much more you can do now than last month!"**
- **Remember that God created them uniquely (Psalm 139)—comparison is rejecting His design**

Trap #5: Using Them for Emotional Support

What it looks like:

- **Confiding in them about adult problems**
- **Saying "You're my best friend" to a 4-year-old**
- **Keeping them home from activities because you'll miss them**
- **Making them your primary source of companionship**
- **Needing their affection or reassurance**

Why it's co-dependent: This reverses the parent-child relationship. They should be receiving support, not providing it. This is emotional incest—using them to meet your emotional needs.

What to do instead:

- **Get your emotional needs met by adults**

- **Maintain peer friendships and adult relationships**
- **Process your feelings with a therapist, spouse, or friends—not your child**
- **Remember they're children, not companions**
- **Encourage them to explore and separate rather than keeping them close to meet your needs**

Trap #6: Hovering Constantly

What it looks like:

- **Staying within three feet at all times**
- **Intervening before they're actually in danger**
- **Narrating everything they're doing**
- **Preventing normal childhood bumps and bruises**
- **Not letting them play independently**

Why it's co-dependent: This is about your anxiety. It prevents them from developing confidence in their own capability and teaches them the world is dangerous and they're incompetent.

What to do instead:

- **Practice gradual separation (across the room, then another room with the door open, then playing in yard while you watch from window)**
- **Let them fall, bump, scrape (within reason—use judgment about actual safety)**
- **Resist constant commentary—allow them to explore without narration**
- **Trust their capability more than your fear**

- **Work on your own anxiety in therapy rather than managing it through control**

Practical Application: A Week of Freedom-Building With Your Toddler/Preschooler

Let's make this concrete. Here's what a week of intentionally building security and autonomy might look like:

Monday: Choice Day

Offer at least 5 specific choices throughout the day:

- **Breakfast choice (2 options)**
- **Clothing choice (2-3 options)**
- **Activity choice (2-3 options)**
- **Snack choice (2 options)**
- **Bedtime routine order choice**

Notice their response. Celebrate their decision-making.

Tuesday: Emotion Coaching Day

Make emotional literacy a focus:

- **Use a feelings chart**
- **Name emotions as you see them: "You look happy!" "That face tells me you're frustrated."**
- **Validate every emotion without trying to change it**
- **Read a book about feelings**

At bedtime, talk about emotions you both experienced today.

Wednesday: Natural Consequences Day

Identify one area where you typically rescue and allow a natural consequence:

- Don't pack extra snacks if they refuse the snack you offered
- Don't bring their favorite toy if they won't put it in the bag when you asked
- Let them be cold if they refuse a jacket
- Let them miss story time if they won't come when called

Stay calm and empathetic when the consequence happens.

Thursday: Struggle Day

Intentionally allow them to struggle with something safe:

- Let them try to zip their own jacket (even if it takes 5 minutes)
- Give them a challenging puzzle and resist helping
- Let them pour their own milk (prepare for spills)
- Have them put on their own shoes

Count to 20 before offering any help. Celebrate effort, not just success.

Friday: Boundary Day

Practice respecting their "no":

- Don't force physical affection
- Respect their food preferences (within reason)
- Let them have alone time if requested
- Honor their "I don't want to" when possible

Also practice their respecting others' "no":

- Model your own boundaries: "I'm saying no to playing right now"
- Teach them to respect a peer's "stop"

Saturday: Independent Play Day

Set up independent play periods:

- **15-20 minutes for toddlers**
- **30-45 minutes for preschoolers**

You stay nearby but don't engage. Let them be bored. Let them figure out what to do. Resist entertaining or directing.

Sunday: Reflection Day

Reflect on the week:

- **What was hardest for you?**
- **Where did you slip into old patterns?**
- **What did you notice about your child?**
- **What progress did you see?**

Pray and surrender your child to God again.

The Long View: What You're Building

It's easy to get lost in the daily challenges of toddler parenting—the tantrums, the messes, the exhaustion, the constant needs. But step back and see what you're building:

The toddler who learns:

- **"My parents respond to my needs" → becomes the adult who knows they're worthy of care**
- **"My emotions are okay" → becomes the adult who doesn't fear or suppress their feelings**
- **"I can make choices" → becomes the adult who trusts their own judgment**
- **"My no matters" → becomes the adult who can set boundaries**

- **"I can struggle and survive" → becomes the adult who perseveres through difficulty**
- **"I'm capable" → becomes the adult who tries new things**
- **"My body is mine" → becomes the adult who can protect themselves**

The preschooler who experiences:

- **Secure attachment → develops healthy relationships**
- **Natural consequences → learns responsibility**
- **Emotional coaching → becomes emotionally intelligent**
- **Appropriate autonomy → launches successfully into adulthood**

You're not just getting through the day. You're laying the foundation for an entire life. You're building neural pathways that will shape how they see themselves, relate to others, and walk with God.

This is holy work. It's difficult, exhausting, and often invisible. But it matters profoundly.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- **Secure attachment requires consistent responsiveness to needs without enmeshment or over-functioning**
- **Teaching "no" from toddlerhood, especially around body autonomy, is foundational to healthy boundaries**
- **Age-appropriate choices (2-3 bounded options) build decision-making skills and confidence**
- **Emotional coaching validates feelings while setting behavioral limits and avoiding emotional enmeshment**
- **Natural consequences in safe situations are powerful teachers**

- **Common co-dependent traps include controlling everything, preventing frustration, mood dependence, comparison, using children for emotional support, and constant hovering**

Remember: The toddler years are about building the foundation: secure attachment + growing autonomy. You don't have to choose between connection and independence—healthy development requires both.

Action Steps This Week:

- 1. Choose one co-dependent pattern to focus on changing**
 - 2. Implement one day from the "Week of Freedom-Building" practice**
 - 3. Create a simple feelings chart to use with your child**
 - 4. Identify one area where you'll allow natural consequences**
 - 5. Practice offering 2-3 choices in at least three situations daily**
-

Reflection Questions:

- 1. What kind of attachment did you experience as a child? How is that affecting how you parent your young children?**
 - 2. What makes it hard for you to respect your toddler/preschooler's "no"? What fears come up?**
 - 3. Which co-dependent trap are you most prone to fall into? What triggers it?**
 - 4. How do you respond when your child is upset? Can you stay regulated, or do you become dysregulated too?**
 - 5. What natural consequences could you allow this week that you've been preventing?**
-

Prayer for Parents of Young Children:

Father, these little ones are so precious and so dependent. Help me meet their needs without enmeshment, love them deeply without smothering, guide them gently without controlling. Give me patience when they struggle, wisdom to know when to help and when to step back, and trust that You are with them even when I'm not. Teach me to build security and autonomy simultaneously—to be their safe harbor while encouraging their exploration. Help me to see them as You see them: fearfully and wonderfully made, each with unique purpose and design. Give me the courage to let them struggle, the grace to repair when I fail, and the peace to trust Your work in their lives. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"But Jesus said, 'Let the children alone, and do not hinder them from coming to Me; for the kingdom of heaven belongs to such as these.'"
—Matthew 19:14 (NASB)

CHAPTER 5

Elementary Years (Ages 6-11): Building Competence and Confidence

"Hear, my son, your father's instruction and do not forsake your mother's teaching; indeed, they are a graceful wreath to your head and ornaments about your neck."

—Proverbs 1:8-9 (NASB)

Jennifer stood in the kitchen at 10:00 PM, hot-gluing feathers onto a shoebox diorama of the Amazon rainforest. Her fourth-grade son, Tyler, had gone to bed an hour ago. The project was due tomorrow.

"Why am I doing this?" she muttered to herself, carefully positioning a plastic monkey she'd driven to three stores to find. "He had two weeks. He did nothing. And here I am, staying up late so he won't get a bad grade."

Her husband walked in. "Jen, why are you doing Tyler's project?"

"Because it's due tomorrow! He'll get a zero if I don't finish it!"

"And whose fault is that?"

Jennifer felt the familiar surge of defensiveness. "I can't just let him fail! What will his teacher think? What if it affects his grades? What if—"

Her husband gently interrupted. "What if we let him experience the consequence of not doing his work? What if we let him learn now, when the stakes are low, rather than doing this same dance when he's in high school?"

Jennifer stared at the half-finished diorama, hot glue gun in hand, and realized with sudden clarity: *I'm not helping him. I'm preventing him from learning. And I'm exhausted.*

This moment captures the central challenge of the elementary years: How do you love and support your child while simultaneously building the competence and confidence they need to function independently?

The elementary years (ages 6-11) are what developmental psychologists call the "age of industry"—children are learning to work, to achieve, to master skills, to navigate peer relationships, and to function in increasingly complex social environments. This is the season when children either develop a sense of competence ("I can do hard things") or a sense of inferiority ("I'm not capable").

Your role during these years is to be their coach and cheerleader, not their manager and rescuer. You're teaching them to fish, not fishing for them. You're giving them the tools, instruction, and opportunities to build genuine capability—which is the only path to genuine confidence.

This chapter will show you how to foster healthy independence during these crucial years without slipping into the co-dependent patterns of over-functioning, rescuing, or living vicariously through your children's achievements.

Fostering Independence Through Age-Appropriate Responsibilities

One of the most important gifts you can give elementary-age children is meaningful responsibility. Not as punishment, not as exploitation, but as the pathway to competence and contribution.

Children who have real responsibilities learn:

- **They're capable of meaningful work**
- **They're needed contributors to family life (not just consumers)**
- **Work precedes reward**
- **Their contributions matter**
- **They can be trusted with important tasks**

Children who are never given responsibility learn:

- **They're incompetent or incapable**
- **Others will always do things for them**

- They're entitled to service without contribution
- Work is something to be avoided
- They can't be trusted

The question isn't whether to give children responsibilities—it's what responsibilities are age-appropriate and how to teach them without slipping into control or over-functioning.

Age-Appropriate Responsibilities

Ages 6-7:

- Make their bed (doesn't have to be perfect)
- Put away their clean laundry (you fold, they put away)
- Set and clear the table
- Feed pets
- Pack their school bag (with your oversight)
- Simple meal prep (pour cereal, make toast, wash vegetables)
- Tidy their room and play areas
- Water plants
- Sweep with a child-size broom

Ages 8-9:

- Do their own laundry start to finish (with initial teaching)
- Make simple meals (sandwiches, scrambled eggs, heating leftovers)
- Vacuum and mop
- Take out trash
- Load/unload dishwasher
- Yard work (rake leaves, pull weeds)

- **Manage their own homework (without reminders)**
- **Wake themselves up with an alarm**
- **Basic pet care (walking, grooming)**
- **Organize their own belongings**

Ages 10-11:

- **Prepare full meals occasionally**
- **Deep cleaning tasks (bathroom cleaning, organizing spaces)**
- **Babysit younger siblings for short periods**
- **Manage their own schedule (activities, assignments, commitments)**
- **Do their own laundry including stain treatment**
- **Grocery shopping assistance (making lists, finding items, calculating prices)**
- **Lawn mowing (depending on maturity and physical size)**
- **Take initiative on seeing needs and meeting them without being asked**

The Teaching Process

You can't just hand an 8-year-old dirty clothes and expect them to know how to do laundry. Teaching responsibility requires a progression:

Stage 1: I do, you watch "I'm going to show you how to load the dishwasher. Watch how I scrape the plates first, then arrange things so water can reach everything."

Stage 2: I do, you help "Now you're going to help me. You hand me the plates and I'll load them. Great job!"

Stage 3: You do, I help "This time you load while I'm here to answer questions. What should you do first? Right, scrape the plates. Good thinking!"

Stage 4: You do, I supervise "You load the dishwasher today. I'll check it when you're done." (Check it, offer one or two specific pieces of feedback, celebrate the good.)

Stage 5: You do independently "Loading the dishwasher after dinner is your job now. Thanks for being responsible for that."

This progression might take weeks or months depending on the task complexity and the child's age. The key is: You're teaching toward independence, not just getting the task done.

Co-dependent parents often skip straight from Stage 1 to Stage 5 ("I showed you once, now do it yourself") and then, when the child struggles, jump back to doing it themselves ("It's just easier if I do it"). This teaches learned helplessness.

The Competence-Confidence Loop

Here's a crucial truth: Confidence doesn't come from praise. It comes from competence.

You can tell your child "You're so smart! You're so capable! You can do anything!" every day, but if they've never actually *done* anything difficult, they won't believe you. Empty praise creates insecure children who doubt their own abilities.

Real confidence develops through this loop:

- 1. Challenge → I attempt something difficult**
- 2. Struggle → It's hard and I have to work at it**
- 3. Persistence → I keep trying even when it's frustrating**
- 4. Success (or instructive failure) → I either succeed or learn something**
- 5. Confidence → I feel capable because I *am* capable**

When you rob your child of steps 2 and 3 (struggle and persistence) by doing things for them, you rob them of step 5 (confidence). They may get

step 4 (success—the completed project, the good grade) but they know they didn't earn it. This creates anxiety and insecurity, not confidence.

Elisabeth Elliot wrote: "God does not discipline us to subdue us, but to condition us for a life of usefulness and blessedness." Similarly, we discipline (teach, train) our children not to control them, but to condition them for lives of usefulness and capability.

What This Requires from You

Fostering genuine independence requires you to:

1. Tolerate imperfection Their bed won't be made as well as you'd make it. Their laundry might have some stains left. The dishes might not be perfectly arranged. *Let it go.* Perfectionism prevents learning.

Say: "I see you made your bed! The blanket is a little crooked here—want me to show you a trick for that? But great job doing it yourself."

NOT: "That's not right. Let me fix it. Here, watch how I do it." (Then redoing it yourself.)

2. Invest time upfront Teaching takes longer than doing it yourself. Much longer. But it's an investment that pays dividends. Spend the time now teaching the skill, so you don't spend the next decade doing it for them.

3. Resist the urge to rescue When they forget their lunch, don't rush it to school. When they procrastinate on homework, don't do it for them. When they don't complete their chores, enforce the consequence. Rescuing prevents learning.

4. Celebrate effort and growth, not just outcomes "I noticed you kept trying even when that was frustrating. That's what matters." "You did that all by yourself! How do you feel about that?" "Last month you couldn't do this. Look how much you've learned!"

5. Give ownership Once they've learned a task, it becomes *their* responsibility, not yours. You're not nagging, reminding, or checking

constantly. They own it, and they experience the consequences if it's not done.

Letting Them Solve Peer Problems Instead of Rescuing

Elementary school is where peer relationships become increasingly important and complex. Children face social challenges: exclusion, conflicts, hurt feelings, shifting friendships, teasing, peer pressure.

Every co-dependent instinct in you will want to fix these problems for them. You'll want to call other parents, intervene with teachers, arrange playdates to force friendships, or lecture the other child. You can't stand watching your child experience social pain.

But here's the truth: Social skills are learned through practice, and practice requires struggle.

Your child needs to learn:

- **How to navigate conflict**
- **How to read social cues**
- **How to advocate for themselves**
- **How to make and maintain friendships**
- **How to handle rejection and exclusion**
- **How to stand up for themselves**
- **How to know when to walk away**

They can only learn these skills by facing these challenges, making mistakes, and trying again. Your job is to coach from the sidelines, not play the game for them.

When to Intervene vs. When to Coach

You SHOULD intervene when:

- There's bullying (repeated, intentional, power-imbalance aggression)
- Physical safety is at risk
- The adult in charge (teacher, coach) isn't adequately supervising
- Your child has tried to solve it and it's escalating
- There's discrimination or abuse happening

You should COACH (not intervene) when:

- Normal childhood conflicts arise (disagreements, hurt feelings, shifting friendships)
- They're struggling to make friends but aren't being bullied
- They're facing social consequences of their own behavior
- They're disappointed about social situations
- They need to learn how to communicate or problem-solve

The distinction: Intervening means you take action. Coaching means you help them develop their own action plan.

The Coaching Process

When your child comes home upset about a social situation, resist the urge to immediately fix it. Instead:

Step 1: Listen without immediately problem-solving

Let them tell the whole story without interrupting. Validate their feelings.

"That sounds really hard. I can see you're upset about what happened with Maya."

NOT: "Well, did you tell the teacher? Did you try being nicer? Maybe if you shared your toys more..."

Step 2: Ask clarifying questions

Help them think through the situation more clearly.

"What happened right before she said that?" "How did you respond?"

"What do you think was going on for her?" "Has this happened before, or is this the first time?"

Step 3: Explore possible responses

"What are some things you could do about this?"

Let them generate ideas first. If they're stuck: "Some kids in this situation might try... What do you think about that?"

Step 4: Help them evaluate options

"What do you think would happen if you did that?" "How would that feel?"

"What's the best-case scenario? Worst-case scenario?"

Step 5: Let them choose

"What do you want to do?"

NOT: "Here's what you should do..." (Unless they're truly stuck and asking for your advice.)

Step 6: Support their choice

"Okay, you're going to try talking to her tomorrow at recess. That takes courage. How do you want to say it? Do you want to practice with me?"

Step 7: Follow up

"How did it go with Maya today?"

If it didn't work: "That didn't go how you hoped. What did you learn? What might you try differently?"

Example Scenario

Child: "Emma didn't invite me to her birthday party. She invited everyone else in our class except me. I hate her!"

Co-dependent response: "What? That's terrible! I'm calling her mother right now. That's so rude! You're too good for her anyway. We'll plan something even better that weekend and you can invite everyone except her. How dare she exclude you!"

(This teaches: Other people are responsible for your social happiness. When you're hurt, someone else should fix it. We handle hurt by retaliating.)

Coaching response: "Oh, honey, that hurts. Being left out feels awful. Come sit with me and tell me what happened."

(Listen)

"That does sound really painful. I can see why you're upset. Let's think about this together. Do you know why she might not have invited you?"

(Child: "No! We used to be friends!")

"So your friendship has changed recently? What's been different?"

(Child: "Well, she's been playing with Sophia a lot, and when I try to join them, they say they're playing a two-person game.")

"Hmm. So Emma has a new close friendship with Sophia. That doesn't feel good for you. What are some things you could do?"

(Child: "I don't know. I guess I could try to find other friends to play with?")

"That's one option. What else?"

(Child: "I could try to talk to Emma and ask why she didn't invite me?")

"You could. How would you feel doing that?"

(Child: "Scared. What if she's mean to me?")

"That's possible. She might not have a good answer, or she might say something that hurts. But you also might find out what's really going on. What do YOU want to do?"

(Child: "I think I want to try playing with some other kids and see if Emma notices.")

"Okay. That's a plan. How are you feeling about that?"

Notice: You didn't fix it. You didn't call the other parent. You didn't retaliate. You didn't tell your child what to do. You helped them think through the situation and choose their own response.

This teaches: You can handle difficult social situations. Your feelings are valid, but you're capable of moving forward. Problems can be thought through and addressed.

What About Your Own Feelings?

Here's the co-dependent trap: When your child is hurt socially, you feel hurt. When they're excluded, you feel their pain viscerally. When another child is mean to them, you want to protect them fiercely.

These feelings are normal. But they're about you, not about your child's need.

Your child needs you to:

- **Stay calm and steady**
- **Believe they can handle this**
- **Give them tools and confidence**
- **Be a safe place to process feelings**
- **Trust them to navigate their own social world**

They don't need you to:

- **Be devastated by their pain**
- **Take on their social battles**
- **Make their problems your problems**
- **Fix everything so they never hurt**

Paul David Tripp writes: "If you're going to be part of what God is doing in the lives of your children, you have to be committed to being part of what God is doing in you." Your child's social struggles might be triggering your own childhood wounds—being excluded, being left out, not fitting in. Work on those wounds in your own therapy, not through your child's social life.

Teaching Them to Advocate for Themselves

One of the most important skills you can teach during the elementary years is self-advocacy—the ability to speak up for themselves, ask for what they need, and address problems directly.

Children who learn to advocate for themselves become adults who:

- **Can set boundaries**
- **Can ask for help when needed**
- **Can address conflicts directly**
- **Don't expect others to read their minds**
- **Take responsibility for their own needs**

How to teach self-advocacy:

1. Let them speak for themselves

When possible, don't speak for them in situations where they could speak for themselves.

At the doctor: "Why don't you tell the doctor about your stomach ache?"

At a restaurant: "You can order for yourself." At the library: "You ask the librarian where to find that book."

2. Role-play difficult conversations

"You need to tell your teacher you don't understand the assignment. Let's practice. What will you say?"

(Practice together. Let them try different approaches.)

3. Back them up when they advocate

If your child speaks up appropriately, support them even if it's inconvenient for you.

Child to coach: "I need more water breaks during practice. I'm getting dizzy." You: (Don't jump in.) Let them say it. Coach: (to you) "Is this okay with you?" You: "Yes, if they're saying they need water, I trust them."

4. Teach the difference between tattling and reporting

Tattling = trying to get someone in trouble Reporting = getting help for a genuine safety or fairness issue

"Is someone hurt or in danger? Then you should tell an adult. Are you just wanting them to get in trouble? Then try to work it out yourself."

5. Give them scripts for common situations

"When you need help, you can say: 'Excuse me, could you help me with this?'" "When someone is bothering you, you can say: 'I don't like that. Please stop.'" "When you don't understand, you can say: 'Could you explain that again?'"

Timothy Keller writes: "To be loved but not known is comforting but superficial. To be known and not loved is our greatest fear. But to be fully known and truly loved is, well, a lot like being loved by God." Teaching children to advocate for themselves is teaching them that their voice matters, their needs are valid, and they're worth speaking up for.

Homework Battles: Whose Responsibility Is It Really?

Few areas of elementary parenting reveal co-dependent patterns more clearly than homework.

The scene plays out in homes across the country every evening:

- Parent: "Have you done your homework?"**

- **Child: "I'll do it later."**
- **(Two hours later)**
- **Parent: "You need to do your homework NOW."**
- **Child: "I don't want to! It's too hard! I don't understand it!"**
- **Parent: (Now anxious, frustrated, feeling responsible) "Fine, I'll help you. Let's get this done."**
- **(Parent essentially does the homework while child halfheartedly participates.)**
- **(Repeat daily.)**

Let's be absolutely clear about something: Homework is your child's responsibility, not yours.

This doesn't mean you can't help. It means:

- **You're not managing their assignments**
- **You're not sitting with them to make sure they do it**
- **You're not doing it for them**
- **You're not fighting with them about it**
- **You're not more invested in their homework than they are**

The Co-Dependent Homework Dynamic

Co-dependent parents make homework their problem. They:

- **Track all assignments (so the child doesn't have to)**
- **Remind constantly (so the child doesn't forget)**
- **Sit with them while they work (so they stay on task)**
- **"Help" by essentially doing the work**
- **Email teachers for extensions or makeups**

- Complete projects when the child procrastinates
- Check everything to make sure it's perfect
- Offer rewards or bribes for completion

Why? Because:

- They can't tolerate their child getting a bad grade
- They feel responsible for their child's academic success
- They worry about their child's future
- They need their child to succeed to feel like a good parent
- They can't separate their child's performance from their own worth

The problem: This creates dependency, not capability. The child learns:

- "My parents will manage this for me"
- "I don't need to be responsible; they'll catch me"
- "If I resist long enough, they'll do it for me"
- "My success is their job, not mine"

The Healthy Homework Approach

Here's what homework responsibility actually looks like:

1. Provide structure and resources, not management

Set up:

- A consistent homework time/place
- Necessary supplies readily available
- A quiet environment conducive to focus
- Your availability for genuine questions

But don't:

- Sit and watch them do it
- Track their assignments
- Remind them constantly
- Check it for completion

2. Offer help with learning, not doing

"Helping with homework" means:

- Explaining a concept they don't understand
- Showing them where to find information
- Answering genuine questions about process
- Reviewing work IF they ask and giving feedback

It doesn't mean:

- Doing problems for them
- Writing their essays
- Completing their projects
- Staying up late to finish what they procrastinated

3. Let them experience natural consequences

If they forget homework at home: Don't bring it to school. If they don't do it: Let them get the zero or have to stay in from recess. If they do it carelessly: Let them get the lower grade. If they procrastinate: Let them pull the late night themselves.

These are low-stakes consequences now. Let them learn while the lessons are cheap.

4. Maintain age-appropriate oversight

Ages 6-7: You'll need to help them establish the habit. Check in: "Is your homework done?" You might look at completed work to celebrate it: "Look how much you learned!"

Ages 8-9: They should be managing it mostly independently. You're available for questions but not managing. Occasional check-ins: "How's homework going this week?"

Ages 10-11: They manage completely. You're informed about major projects but they own the timeline. You answer questions when asked but don't monitor.

5. Communicate expectations clearly

"Homework is your responsibility. I'm happy to help if you have questions, but I won't be tracking your assignments or reminding you. If you forget or don't do it, you'll experience whatever consequence the teacher has for that. I trust you to manage this."

Then follow through. When they forget: "That's disappointing. What did you learn? What will you do differently tomorrow?"

NOT: "I TOLD you to do it! This is what happens when you don't listen to me! Fine, I'll email your teacher to see if you can make it up."

When to Be Concerned

There's a difference between letting natural consequences teach and ignoring genuine learning difficulties.

Be involved/seek help if:

- Your child consistently struggles despite genuine effort**
- They're showing signs of learning disabilities**
- Homework regularly takes excessive time (way beyond what's expected)**
- They're showing extreme anxiety about school**

- Teachers express concerns about their understanding

This is different from: They're capable but lazy, they procrastinate, they'd rather play than work, they forget things. Those are character/responsibility issues that consequences can teach.

The Jennifer Resolution

Remember Jennifer from the beginning of this chapter, hot-gluing Tyler's rainforest diorama at 10:00 PM?

After her husband's question, she made a decision. She threw away the half-finished diorama.

The next morning, Tyler came down for breakfast. "Mom, where's my project?"

"I didn't finish it. It was your project, not mine. You'll need to turn in whatever you have."

"What? But it's due today! I'll get a zero!"

"You might. That will be a hard lesson about starting projects on time. What will you do differently next time?"

Tyler was furious. He went to school empty-handed. He got a zero.

But here's what happened: Two weeks later, he had another project due. He started it the first day. He worked on it a little each evening. He completed it himself, with pride.

Jennifer told me later: "That zero was the best gift I ever gave him. He learned more from failing that one project than he'd learned from all the A's I'd earned for him before."

Galatians 6:4-5 says: "But each one must examine his own work, and then he will have reason for boasting in regard to himself alone, and not in regard to another. For each one will bear his own load" (NASB).

Your child must examine their own work. They will bear their own load. Your job is to prepare them for that, not to carry the load for them.

Activities and Over-Scheduling: Whose Dream Are They Living?

The elementary years are when many children begin participating in organized activities: sports, music, dance, martial arts, clubs, teams. These can be wonderful opportunities for skill development, social connection, and discovering interests.

But they can also become the arena where co-dependent patterns play out through:

- **Over-scheduling to the point of exhaustion**
- **Living vicariously through your child's achievements**
- **Pushing them toward your unfulfilled dreams**
- **Making family life revolve entirely around their activities**
- **Measuring their (and your) worth by their performance**

Healthy Reasons for Activities

Activities should serve your child's development by:

- **Teaching new skills and fostering competence**
- **Providing opportunities for social connection**
- **Helping them discover their interests and strengths**
- **Building character (persistence, teamwork, handling disappointment)**
- **Encouraging physical health and creative expression**
- **Offering fun and joy**

Notice: The activities are *for the child*, not for you. Not for your sense of accomplishment, not to fulfill your dreams, not to prove anything about your parenting.

Warning Signs of Unhealthy Activity Involvement

You might be over-involved if:

1. Your emotional state depends on their performance

You're elated when they score/win/succeed. You're devastated when they don't. Your mood at dinner is determined by how practice went. You can't enjoy the weekend if they had a bad game.

This makes their activity about your emotions, not their development.

2. Family life revolves entirely around their activities

Meals are constantly rushed. Siblings' needs are always secondary. Family time is non-existent because of practice/game/tournament schedules. Vacations are built around sports tournaments.

This teaches them they're the center of the universe and others exist to facilitate their activities.

3. You're more invested than they are

You're the one checking the schedule, packing the bag, setting the alarm. You care more about whether they practice than they do. You're crushed when they want to quit; they're relieved.

This means you're living through them, not supporting them.

4. You coach from the sidelines constantly

You're yelling instructions during games. You're critiquing their performance on the way home. You're telling them what they should have done differently. You're undermining their coach by contradicting instructions.

This communicates they're not good enough and you need to manage their performance.

5. You've over-scheduled them into exhaustion

They're doing multiple activities simultaneously. They have no downtime. They're stressed and tired. They've asked to quit but you won't let them because "we don't quit."

This is about your agenda, not their wellbeing.

6. You're spending beyond your means

You're going into debt to fund expensive activities, private lessons, elite teams, travel tournaments. Other family needs are sacrificed to pay for activities.

This teaches them their wants override family financial health.

7. You justify bad behavior because of their talent

They're rude to coaches, mean to teammates, entitled at home—but you excuse it because "they're under a lot of pressure" or "that's just their competitive nature."

This teaches them talent excuses character problems.

Questions to Ask About Each Activity

For each activity your child participates in, honestly answer:

- 1. Whose idea was this activity? (Yours or theirs?)**
- 2. Why are they doing it? (To develop skills, have fun, spend time with friends? Or to fulfill your dreams?)**
- 3. Do they want to continue? (Are you letting them make age-appropriate decisions about continuing/quitting?)**
- 4. What is it teaching them? (Skills, character, teamwork? Or entitlement, performance pressure, that activities define worth?)**
- 5. How does it affect family life? (Enriching or overwhelming?)**
- 6. Can you afford it financially and time-wise? (Without stress or resentment?)**

- 7. Are you emotionally enmeshed with their performance? (Can you stay regulated regardless of how they do?)**

The "One Activity" Rule

Consider limiting elementary-age children to one or two activities per season (school year vs. summer). This:

- **Prevents burnout**
- **Allows time for unstructured play**
- **Maintains family connection**
- **Teaches them to choose and commit**
- **Keeps activities in proper perspective**

When they want to add another activity: "We need to choose. Which matters most to you right now? You can do soccer or piano this season, but not both. You decide."

This teaches prioritization and decision-making.

Letting Them Quit

This is controversial, but important: Sometimes letting your child quit an activity is the right choice.

When quitting is appropriate:

- **They're clearly miserable and it's affecting their overall wellbeing**
- **They've lost all interest and are only continuing because you're making them**
- **The activity is interfering with more important things (family relationships, health, age-appropriate responsibilities)**
- **They want to try something different**
- **The schedule has become unsustainable**

When quitting isn't appropriate:

- **They want to quit today because practice was hard (talk about commitment and finishing what you started)**
- **They want to quit because they're not immediately good at it (discuss perseverance)**
- **They want to quit the week before a big event they committed to (honor commitments)**

How to handle it: "I hear you want to quit soccer. Let's talk about that. What's making you want to stop? What would quitting give you? What would you lose? Here's my thought: You've committed to this season and your team is counting on you. Let's finish the season, and then if you still want to stop, we'll support that. Does that seem fair?"

This teaches: We honor commitments, but activities are meant to enrich life, not dominate it.

Your Own Unfulfilled Dreams

Be honest: Are you pushing your child toward activities because of your own regrets or unfulfilled aspirations?

Did you always wish you'd played baseball, so now you're living through your son's Little League? Were you a dancer who quit too soon, so now you're pushing your daughter to stick with ballet even though she hates it? Were you terrible at school, so now you're determined your child will be a straight-A student?

This is emotional enmeshment. Your child is not here to fulfill your dreams or fix your regrets. They're here to become who God made them to be, which might be completely different from you.

Elisabeth Elliot wrote: "The secret is Christ in me, not me in a different set of circumstances." Your child is not a different version of you with a

chance to do it "right this time." They're a completely different person with their own path.

Surrender your unfulfilled dreams to God. Process them in therapy if needed. But don't impose them on your child.

Letting Them Experience Disappointment

Elementary school is full of disappointments:

- **Not making the team**
- **Not getting the part in the play**
- **Not being invited to the party**
- **Not winning the award**
- **Not being picked for the special program**
- **Not having their artwork chosen**
- **Not being in the same class as their best friend**

Every fiber of your being will want to protect them from these disappointments. You'll want to:

- **Call the coach and argue for them to make the team**
- **Explain to the teacher why your child should have gotten the award**
- **Plan something even better so they don't feel left out**
- **Complain to the school about unfair selection processes**
- **Transfer them to a different class**

Stop. Breathe. Remember: Disappointment is a teacher, not a trauma.

What Disappointment Teaches

Children who experience disappointment learn:

- **Life isn't always fair**

- Not getting what you want isn't the end of the world
- You can survive difficult feelings
- You can try again or try something different
- Your worth isn't determined by external validation
- Sometimes things don't work out, and that's okay

Children who never experience disappointment learn:

- They're entitled to get everything they want
- Someone will always fix things for them
- They can't handle difficult emotions
- The world revolves around them
- Their worth is fragile and depends on external success

How to Support Them Through Disappointment

Step 1: Validate the disappointment

"I know you're really disappointed about not making the team. You worked hard at tryouts and really wanted this."

NOT: "It's not a big deal. There will be other teams. You'll get over it."

Their disappointment is real and valid. Honor it.

Step 2: Resist the urge to fix it

Don't immediately offer solutions, distractions, or alternatives to make the feeling go away.

Sit with them in the disappointment. Let them feel it. Be present without rescuing.

"This is really hard. I'm here with you."

Step 3: Help them process

After the initial emotion has settled:

"What's the hardest part about this?" "What are you learning about yourself?" "Is there anything you'd do differently if you could try again?"

Step 4: Explore next steps (when they're ready)

"What do you want to do now? Try out again next year? Try a different activity? Take a break?"

Let them lead this. Don't impose your solutions.

Step 5: Connect it to bigger truths

"Your worth isn't determined by making this team. God loves you the same whether you made it or not. You're still the same amazing person you were before tryouts."

When NOT to Intervene

Don't intervene in disappointments unless:

- **There was genuine injustice or discrimination**
- **Rules were not followed fairly**
- **Your child's safety or rights were violated**

Normal disappointments that DON'T require intervention:

- **Not being chosen for something**
- **Not winning**
- **Not being invited to something**
- **Not getting the grade/award/recognition they wanted**
- **Friends choosing other friends**
- **Not having the outcome they desired**

These are life. Let them experience and learn from them.

Regular One-on-One Time Without Fixing or Lecturing

Amidst all this talk of letting them struggle, experience consequences, and solve their own problems, don't miss this crucial element: Your children need regular, undivided attention from you where you're not managing, teaching, or correcting.

Elementary-age children need to know they matter to you apart from their performance, compliance, or achievement. They need time with you where you're simply enjoying them, not improving them.

What One-on-One Time Should Include

- 1. Your full attention No phone. No half-listening while you do other tasks. Your eyes, ears, and heart fully present.**
- 2. Following their lead They choose the activity (within reason). You participate with interest and curiosity.**
- 3. Accepting them as they are No corrections. No teaching moments. No criticism. Just acceptance and enjoyment.**
- 4. Laughing and playing Be light. Be fun. Be present. Show them you enjoy their company, not just their compliance.**
- 5. Listening to their world Ask about their interests, friends, thoughts, ideas. Listen with genuine interest, not just waiting to teach or correct.**

What to Avoid

Don't use one-on-one time to:

- Lecture about recent behavior issues**
- Give feedback on how they could improve**
- Drill them on schoolwork**
- Correct their attitudes or choices**
- Make everything a teaching moment**

This is connection time, not correction time.

How Often

Aim for:

- **15-30 minutes of one-on-one time with each child per week (minimum)**
- **More if possible**
- **Regular enough that it's expected and reliable**

Ideas for one-on-one time:

- **Walk around the block together**
- **Play a board game they choose**
- **Get ice cream and talk**
- **Do a craft together**
- **Cook something together**
- **Read together (even if they can read themselves)**
- **Play catch, shoot baskets, bike ride**
- **Visit a place they're interested in**
- **Work on a project together (that they've chosen)**
- **Have a special breakfast or lunch date**

The activity matters less than the connection.

Why This Matters

Children who receive regular, undivided, non-performance-based attention from parents:

- **Feel secure in their worth**
- **Are more receptive to correction (because connection is secure)**

- Are more likely to come to parents with problems
- Develop healthier self-esteem
- Learn that relationship isn't conditional on performance

Children who only receive attention when performing, complying, or needing correction:

- Learn love is conditional
- Develop performance-based worth
- Either become people-pleasers or rebels
- Don't bring their real selves to parents

Dietrich Bonhoeffer wrote: "The person who loves their dream of community will destroy community, but the person who loves those around them will create community." Love your actual child—messy, imperfect, still-learning—not just your dream of who they should become.

Co-Dependent Traps to Avoid: Elementary Edition

Let's specifically name the traps you're most likely to fall into during the elementary years:

Trap #1: Doing Their Projects for Them

What it looks like:

- "Helping" so much that it's really your project
- Staying up late to finish their work
- Using your adult skills/resources to make it impressive
- Taking over when they're struggling

Why it's co-dependent: You need them to succeed (for your own validation), you can't tolerate them struggling, and you're teaching them they're not capable.

What to do instead:

- **Provide materials and space**
- **Answer genuine questions**
- **Let them create something elementary-level (not adult-level)**
- **Let them turn in mediocre work if that's what they produced**
- **Value their effort and learning process over the outcome**

Trap #2: Fighting Their Battles With Teachers/Coaches

What it looks like:

- **Emailing teachers to complain about grades**
- **Arguing with coaches about playing time**
- **Demanding special treatment or exceptions**
- **Undermining authority figures who have legitimate expectations**
- **Making excuses for your child's behavior or lack of effort**

Why it's co-dependent: You're taking ownership of problems that are theirs to solve. You're preventing them from learning to advocate for themselves and accept authority.

What to do instead:

- **Teach them to speak to teachers/coaches themselves**
- **Role-play difficult conversations**
- **Only intervene if there's genuine injustice or safety concerns**
- **Support the authority figures in their legitimate expectations**
- **Let natural consequences teach**

Trap #3: Living Vicariously Through Their Achievements

What it looks like:

- Your mood determined by their performance
- Bragging excessively about their accomplishments
- Feeling personally validated when they succeed
- Feeling personally crushed when they fail or don't measure up
- Comparing them favorably to other children
- Your conversations with other adults primarily about their achievements

Why it's co-dependent: You've made their performance about your worth. They exist to make you feel good about yourself. This creates immense pressure and teaches them their value is in what they do, not who they are.

What to do instead:

- Celebrate character over achievement
- Keep your emotions regulated regardless of their performance
- Have your own life, interests, and sources of fulfillment
- Focus on effort and growth, not outcomes
- Remember they're not performing for you

Trap #4: Making Family Life Revolve Entirely Around Their Activities

What it looks like:

- Every evening/weekend scheduled around practices and games
- Siblings sacrificed to the schedule of the "star" child
- No family dinners because of activity schedules
- Vacations planned around tournaments
- Other family needs constantly secondary

Why it's co-dependent: You're teaching them they're the center of the universe and others exist to facilitate their lives. You're creating entitled children and neglecting the rest of the family.

What to do instead:

- **Limit activities to what's sustainable for the whole family**
- **Protect family dinners and time together**
- **Ensure siblings' needs are also met**
- **Choose activities that fit your family life, not organize family life around activities**
- **Be willing to say no to opportunities if they're too demanding**

Trap #5: Bribing for Grades or Compliance

What it looks like:

- **"\$5 for every A on your report card"**
- **"If you make the honor roll, we'll get you that toy you've been wanting"**
- **"Clean your room and I'll buy you ice cream"**
- **Rewards for behavior that should be expected**

Why it's co-dependent: You're externalizing motivation. They learn to work for rewards, not for the satisfaction of work itself or for responsibility. You're also making it about you (because you're the one giving the rewards based on their compliance).

What to do instead:

- **Let natural consequences motivate (good grades lead to easier future opportunities; clean room is more pleasant to live in)**
- **Celebrate effort and character without material rewards**

- Occasionally surprise with celebration (not promised beforehand as bribe)
- Teach intrinsic motivation: "How do you feel about that grade? What did you learn?"
- Use logical privileges: "When you show responsibility with X, you get more privileges in Y"

Trap #6: Comparing Them to Siblings or Peers

What it looks like:

- "Why can't you be more like your sister?"
- "Emily's daughter is already reading at a fifth-grade level..."
- Worrying excessively about whether they're "ahead" or "behind"
- Secretly (or not so secretly) competing with other parents through your children

Why it's co-dependent: You're making their worth comparative rather than inherent. You're also making their development about your ego (how you measure up as a parent compared to others).

What to do instead:

- Celebrate each child's unique strengths
- Remember development is individual and non-linear
- Refuse comparison conversations with other parents
- Shut down comparison thinking in yourself
- Focus on growth, not competition

A Day in the Life: Elementary Parenting Without Co-Dependency

Let's put this all together with an example of what a typical day might look like when you're parenting from freedom rather than co-dependency:

Morning: Child doesn't wake up when alarm goes off (they're responsible for their own waking). You don't rush in to wake them. They're late and have to skip breakfast. Natural consequence: They're hungry until snack time.

Instead of: "I called you five times! Why don't you ever listen? I can't make you be on time!" you say: "You were late today. That meant no time for breakfast. What will you do differently tomorrow?"

After School: Child complains that teacher gave too much homework and it's not fair.

Instead of: "That's ridiculous! I'm going to email your teacher. That's too much!" you say: "Sounds like you're frustrated with the amount. What do you think you could do about it?" (They might decide to talk to the teacher themselves, or decide to manage their time better, or realize they're just complaining but will get it done.)

Homework Time: You've set up a space and time for homework. Child sits down. After 15 minutes: "Mom! I don't understand this!"

Instead of: Coming over and doing it with them step-by-step, you say: "What part is confusing? Where could you find information about that? What have you tried so far?" If they've genuinely tried and need help with the concept, you teach the concept—you don't do the problems.

Before Dinner: Child is supposed to have set the table (their responsibility). Table is not set.

Instead of: Doing it yourself while sighing dramatically, or yelling at them about responsibility, you simply say: "Table's not set. Dinner's ready. We'll eat when the table is set." (Wait. Stay calm. Let them experience the consequence of everyone waiting to eat because of their incomplete task.)

Evening: Child has a big science project due in two weeks. They mention it briefly.

Instead of: "Okay, let's make a timeline. What do you need? When should we go to the store? Let me help you organize this," you say: "Sounds like a big project! What's your plan for getting it done?" If they say, "I don't know," you say: "Well, you've got two weeks. Think about what you need and let me know if you have questions."

Bedtime: During one-on-one reading time, child mentions they're worried about tryouts for the school play tomorrow.

Instead of: "You'll do great! You're such a good actor! I'm sure you'll get a part!" (empty reassurance) or "Well, did you practice enough? What scenes are you doing? Let's practice again!" (making it your anxiety), you say: "Tryouts can feel nerve-wracking. What are you most worried about?" Listen. Validate. "Whatever happens, I'm proud of you for trying. And I'll be here tomorrow to hear how it went." (Support without pressure, acknowledgment of feelings without fixing.)

See the pattern? You're present, available, supportive—but you're not managing, controlling, doing for them, or taking ownership of their responsibilities and feelings.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- **Fostering independence through age-appropriate responsibilities builds genuine competence and confidence**
- **Children need to solve their own peer problems with your coaching, not your intervention**
- **Homework is their responsibility; your job is providing structure and resources, not management**
- **Activities should serve their development, not your ego or unfulfilled dreams**

- Disappointment is a valuable teacher that prepares them for life's inevitable letdowns
- Regular one-on-one time builds connection apart from performance or compliance
- Major co-dependent traps include doing their work for them, fighting their battles, living through their achievements, and over-scheduling

Remember: The elementary years are for building competence. Competence comes through struggle, natural consequences, and genuine effort—not through your over-functioning or rescue. Your job is to coach from the sidelines, not play the game for them.

Action Steps This Week:

1. Identify one responsibility you're going to transfer fully to your child this month
2. Practice the coaching process for one peer problem instead of intervening
3. Step back from one aspect of homework management (tracking, reminding, or helping)
4. Evaluate each activity your child is involved in using the questions in this chapter
5. Schedule one-on-one time with each child this week—no agenda except connection

Reflection Questions:

1. What responsibilities are you still doing for your child that they could do themselves? What makes it hard to release these?

2. When your child faces social problems, what's your first instinct?
How often do you intervene vs. coach?
 3. How involved are you in homework? Is this about your anxiety or their actual need? What would change if you stepped back?
 4. Are any of your child's activities more about you than about them?
Which ones? What unfulfilled dreams of yours might you be imposing on them?
 5. How do you respond when your child experiences disappointment?
Can you stay steady and supportive without rescuing?
-

Prayer for Parents of Elementary-Age Children:

Father, these years are about building competence and confidence. Give me wisdom to know when to step in and when to step back. Help me resist the urge to rescue, to do for them what they can do themselves, to fight their battles or live through their achievements. Teach me to be a coach, not a manager—present but not hovering, supportive but not over-functioning. When they struggle, help me trust that struggle is teaching them. When they fail, help me see it as learning, not disaster. When they disappoint others or are disappointed themselves, help me stay steady. Give them opportunities to build real competence through real responsibility. And help me celebrate who they are, not just what they accomplish. Thank You for each child's unique design. Help me steward it faithfully without imposing my own dreams or expectations. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"Each one must examine his own work, and then he will have reason for boasting in regard to himself alone, and not in regard to another. For each one will bear his own load."

—Galatians 6:4-5 (NASB)

CHAPTER 6

Tweens and Middle School (Ages 12-14): Navigating the Identity Years

"When I was a child, I used to speak like a child, think like a child, reason like a child; when I became a man, I did away with childish things."

—1 Corinthians 13:11 (NASB)

Karen stood outside her 13-year-old daughter Megan's bedroom door, phone in hand, debating.

She'd noticed Megan had been spending hours in her room, door closed, earbuds in. She'd been distant at dinner, answering questions with one-word responses. She'd asked to skip their usual Saturday morning breakfast together. And yesterday, Karen had walked past and heard her crying.

Every instinct in Karen screamed: *Something is wrong. I need to know what it is. I need to fix it.*

Her thumb hovered over Megan's phone monitoring app. She could see every text, every social media post, every search. She could know exactly what was happening in Megan's life. She could intervene before things got worse.

But another voice, quieter, whispered: *This isn't the way. This violates her privacy. This communicates you don't trust her. This prevents her from learning to navigate her own life.*

Karen stood there, torn between two fears: the fear that something was wrong and she wasn't doing enough to protect her daughter, and the fear that by trying to protect her, she was actually preventing her from growing up.

She finally knocked on the door.

"Meg? Can I come in?"

A pause. Then: "I guess."

Karen opened the door and sat on the edge of the bed. Megan was lying face-down, earbuds in, phone next to her.

"You seem like you've been having a hard time lately. Want to talk about it?"

"Not really."

Every fiber of Karen's being wanted to push, to demand, to access that phone and find out what was going on. Instead, she took a breath.

"Okay. I'm here if you change your mind. I love you. And I trust you to work through whatever you're dealing with. But if you want to talk, or if things get too big to handle alone, my door is always open."

"Okay."

Karen left. It felt like failure. It felt like abandonment. It felt like she was doing nothing.

But actually, she was doing something crucial: she was respecting her daughter's growing need for privacy and autonomy while remaining available and connected. She was parenting from trust rather than fear. She was resisting the co-dependent urge to know everything and control everything.

The middle school years (roughly ages 12-14, though some children enter this stage earlier or later) are arguably the most challenging years of parenting. Your child is no longer a child but not yet an adult. They're navigating a perfect storm of physical changes, emotional intensity, peer pressure, identity formation, and social complexity—often while their rational brain (prefrontal cortex) is still years away from full development.

And you? You're navigating the grief of losing your child while trying to learn how to parent an emerging adolescent. You're dealing with their rejection, their eye-rolls, their slammed doors, their "You don't

understand anything!"—all while trying to maintain connection and provide guidance.

For co-dependent parents, these years are particularly treacherous because everything in you wants to know, control, manage, and fix. But the developmental task of this age is identity formation and individuation, which requires privacy, autonomy, and space to make mistakes.

This chapter will help you navigate the middle school years with wisdom, boundaries, and grace—staying connected without enmeshing, involved without controlling, present without hovering.

The Push-Pull of This Age: Needing You While Pushing You Away

The defining characteristic of early adolescence is ambivalence. Your middle schooler simultaneously needs you desperately and wants you to disappear. They want your help but reject it when offered. They crave your approval but act like your opinion doesn't matter. They need reassurance but push you away when you try to comfort them.

This isn't manipulation or defiance (though it often feels like it). It's developmentally normal. They're trying to figure out who they are apart from you, which requires creating distance—but they're not yet confident enough to truly separate, so they keep circling back.

Understanding this dynamic is essential to not taking it personally or reacting from your own hurt.

What's Happening Developmentally

Physically: Puberty brings massive hormonal shifts that affect mood, impulse control, and emotional regulation. Their bodies are changing in ways they can't control, which creates self-consciousness and vulnerability.

Cognitively: They're developing abstract thinking—they can now imagine possibilities, question authority, think about the future, and consider

hypothetical scenarios. This is wonderful progress, but it also means they question everything you say and argue constantly.

Emotionally: The emotional center of the brain (amygdala) is in overdrive while the reasoning center (prefrontal cortex) is still developing. This means big emotions with limited ability to regulate them. Everything feels intense: friendship drama is life-and-death, social rejection is devastating, embarrassment is unbearable.

Socially: Peer relationships become central. Their friends' opinions start to matter more than yours (this is developmentally appropriate). They're learning to navigate complex social hierarchies, romantic feelings, and identity groups.

Identity-wise: They're asking: "Who am I? What do I believe? What matters to me? How am I different from my parents?" This requires experimentation, which might look like trying on different identities, challenging your values, and pushing boundaries.

What the Push-Pull Looks Like Practically

One day: "Mom, will you watch this show with me?" (Connection) Next day: "Can you just LEAVE ME ALONE?" (Separation)

One moment: "Can you help me with this?" (Dependence) Next moment: "I can do it myself! Stop treating me like a baby!" (Independence)

One week: Talking openly about their life Next week: Total silence, hiding in their room

One situation: Acting mature and capable Next situation: Falling apart over something small

This inconsistency is normal. They're practicing independence while still needing the security of knowing you're there. Your job is to stay steady through the oscillation.

How to Navigate the Push-Pull

1. Don't take the rejection personally

When they roll their eyes, sigh dramatically at your existence, or act like you're the most embarrassing person on earth—this isn't really about you. It's about them trying to create differentiation.

Remind yourself: *This is normal. This is healthy. They're supposed to be creating distance. My job is to stay connected without clinging.*

2. Stay available without forcing connection

Don't demand they talk to you, spend time with you, or confide in you. But make it clear you're available when they're ready.

"I'm here if you want to talk. If not now, whenever you're ready." "I'd love to spend time together this weekend. Let me know if you want to do something."

Then honor their choice, whether they say yes or no.

3. Respect their need for privacy while maintaining appropriate oversight

This is a delicate balance. They need more privacy than they did as elementary-age children—but they're not adults yet. More on this later in the chapter.

4. Connect on their terms, not yours

If they want to show you a funny video at 10:00 PM, engage—even if you were about to tell them to go to bed. These moments of connection are precious and unpredictable. Don't miss them because of your agenda.

If they're willing to talk in the car, take the long way home. If they want to stay up late one night chatting, let the bedtime slide.

5. Validate the difficulty of this stage

"I know these years are hard. Your body is changing, school is more stressful, friendships are complicated. I'm here to support you through it."

This acknowledges what they're experiencing without trying to fix it.

6. Maintain boundaries while respecting theirs

Just because they're pushing you away doesn't mean you have no authority or boundaries. You can simultaneously respect their growing autonomy AND maintain family rules.

"I respect that you want more privacy. And there's still a family rule about screen time. Both things are true."

Your Own Middle School Wounds

Here's what makes this stage particularly difficult for co-dependent parents: it often triggers your own middle school trauma.

If you were bullied, excluded, struggled socially, or felt miserable during these years, watching your child go through middle school can reactivate those wounds. You might:

- Be hyper-vigilant about social dynamics**
- Project your experience onto theirs**
- Try to prevent them from experiencing what you experienced**
- Live vicariously through their social success**
- Panic at signs they're struggling**

If your parents were controlling or invasive during these years, you might swing to the opposite extreme—being too permissive because you don't want to repeat their mistakes.

This is where your own therapy work becomes essential. You cannot parent your child's adolescence well if you're still wounded by your own.

Take time to reflect:

- What was my middle school experience like?**
- What wounds am I still carrying from that time?**
- How might those wounds be affecting how I parent my adolescent?**

- What do I need to process in therapy so I don't project onto my child?

Paul David Tripp writes: "God has chosen to do much of His work in the lives of our children through us, broken tools that we are. That reality should make us feel much more dependent on Him." Your brokenness doesn't disqualify you—but unexamined brokenness will sabotage your parenting.

Allowing Identity Exploration Without Panic

One of the primary developmental tasks of early adolescence is identity formation. Your middle schooler is asking: "Who am I? What do I believe? What matters to me? How am I the same as or different from my parents and peers?"

This exploration is necessary and healthy. But it often looks alarming to parents:

- They dye their hair an unusual color
- They want to dress differently than you'd prefer
- They become interested in music/media you don't understand
- They question beliefs and values you've taught them
- They seem to become a different person overnight
- They identify with groups or labels you don't understand
- They reject things they used to love

Co-dependent parents panic at identity exploration because:

- You need them to be an extension of you
- Their choices feel like a reflection on you
- You're afraid of losing them
- You want them to follow your path

- You can't tolerate them making "wrong" choices
- You need them to be the "good kid" for your sense of worth

But biblical parenting requires releasing them to discover who God made them to be, even when that looks different than you hoped or expected.

The Difference Between Identity Exploration and Genuine Concern

Normal identity exploration (don't panic):

- Clothing/hair/style choices that are different from your preference
- Music, media, or interests you don't share or understand
- Friend groups that are different from what you expected
- Questioning beliefs or asking hard questions about faith
- Trying different activities or dropping old ones
- Personality changes (becoming quieter or louder, more serious or more silly)
- Using different language or slang
- Expressing opinions that differ from yours

Genuine concerns (appropriate to address):

- Self-harm or suicidal ideation
- Substance use
- Involvement in illegal activities
- Relationships with adults who are inappropriate
- Drastic personality changes combined with secretiveness
- Engagement with content that promotes harm to self or others
- Consistently destructive or dangerous behavior

The key question: Is this about your comfort, or is it about their safety?

How to Support Identity Exploration

1. Distinguish between morality and preference

**There's a difference between moral issues and matters of preference.
Don't treat preference issues as moral issues.**

Moral issues:

- **Honesty**
- **Kindness**
- **Integrity**
- **Respect**
- **Purity (age-appropriate sexual boundaries)**
- **Obeying laws**
- **Treating people with dignity**

Preference issues:

- **Hair color and style**
- **Clothing choices (within modesty parameters)**
- **Music taste**
- **Room decoration**
- **Preferred activities and hobbies**
- **Style of expression**

Give them freedom in preference areas. Save your authority and strong opinions for moral areas.

2. Ask questions instead of lecturing

When they express interest in something you don't understand:

"Tell me about why you're interested in that." "What do you like about that music/show/activity?" "What does that mean to you?"

Genuine curiosity, not interrogation. You're trying to understand their world, not judge it.

3. Validate their evolving sense of self

"You're figuring out who you are. That's important work." "It's okay to try different things to see what fits." "I'm interested in who you're becoming, even when it surprises me."

4. Don't shame their questions or doubts

If they question your faith, your politics, your values—don't panic or shame them.

"Those are good questions. Let's talk about them." "I'm glad you're thinking deeply about this." "It's okay to have doubts. Faith that's never questioned often isn't deeply owned."

Create safety for them to think out loud, even when their thinking scares you.

5. Let them own their choices in non-safety areas

They want to dress in all black? Okay. They want to try a sport you don't care about? Support it. They want to quit piano after years of lessons? Let them (once they finish their commitment). They want to redecorate their room in a style you think is ugly? It's their space.

This teaches: "My choices are mine. I'm becoming my own person. My parents trust me to figure this out."

6. Remember: identity exploration doesn't equal identity commitment

Just because they try something doesn't mean they'll stick with it. This phase is about trying on different identities to see what fits. Most of what they explore in middle school won't last.

Don't over-react to each new interest as if it's permanent. Stay calm. Stay curious.

When Your Child Questions Faith

This deserves special attention because it's one of the most frightening aspects of identity exploration for Christian parents.

Your middle schooler might:

- **Say they don't want to go to church**
- **Question whether God is real**
- **Ask hard questions about suffering, hell, or biblical difficulties**
- **Resist family devotions or prayer**
- **Say they don't believe what you believe**

Don't panic. This is often a necessary part of moving from inherited faith to owned faith.

Do:

- **Take their questions seriously**
- **Engage with their doubts thoughtfully**
- **Show them that faith can withstand questioning**
- **Share your own doubts and how you've worked through them**
- **Connect them with trusted adults (youth pastor, mentor) who can engage their questions**
- **Pray for them without pressuring them**
- **Model vibrant faith without being preachy**
- **Give them space to wrestle**

Don't:

- Shame them for doubting
- Give pat answers to complex questions
- Force religious participation that feels coercive
- Make them pretend to believe what they don't
- Panic and crack down with control
- Make their salvation dependent on your anxiety

Timothy Keller writes: "A faith without some doubts is like a human body without any antibodies in it." Doubt can strengthen faith if it's worked through honestly.

Remember: God is not threatened by their questions. He's big enough to handle their doubts. Your job is to create space for honest exploration while continuing to model and offer the faith you've found life-giving.

Peer Pressure and Teaching Them to Trust Their Own Voice

During the middle school years, peer influence intensifies dramatically. This is developmentally appropriate—adolescents are supposed to start caring more about peer opinions as they prepare to eventually leave the family system and form adult relationships.

But intense peer orientation also creates vulnerability to peer pressure. Your middle schooler desperately wants to fit in, to be accepted, to not be weird or different. This can lead them to compromise their values, hide their true selves, or make poor choices to gain social acceptance.

Your job isn't to eliminate peer influence (you can't). It's to help them develop an internal compass strong enough to resist negative peer pressure while maintaining healthy friendships.

Why Peer Pressure Is So Powerful at This Age

Brain development: The reward center of the adolescent brain is hyperactive around peers. Being accepted by peers literally lights up their

brain in ways that feel intensely good. Rejection or exclusion activates the same pain centers as physical pain.

Identity formation: They're figuring out who they are partly through belonging to groups. "I'm a theater kid" or "I'm a jock" or "I'm part of this friend group" gives them identity scaffolding while their individual identity develops.

Social complexity: Middle school social dynamics are brutal. Social hierarchies, shifting alliances, gossip, exclusion, and cliques create a constant undercurrent of anxiety about social positioning.

Normal development: Caring about peer opinions is how adolescents practice the adult task of navigating diverse relationships and social expectations. It's not bad—it's preparation for adulthood.

Teaching Them to Trust Their Own Voice

1. Help them identify their values

They need to know what they stand for before they encounter pressure.

"What matters to you?" "What kind of person do you want to be?" "What would you want to be known for?" "What are you not willing to compromise on?"

Help them articulate their values in their own words, not just parrot yours.

2. Role-play pressure situations

"What would you do if your friends wanted you to [sneak out/try vaping/cheat on a test/be mean to someone/send inappropriate pictures]?"

Let them practice responses:

- **"That's not my thing."**
- **"I'm going to pass."**
- **"My parents would kill me." (It's okay to use you as the excuse!)**

- "I don't want to get in trouble."
- "Nah, I'm good."

They need pre-planned responses because in-the-moment decision-making is hard for adolescent brains.

3. Distinguish between healthy and unhealthy friendships

Healthy friendships:

- Accept you as you are
- Don't require you to compromise your values to belong
- Support your growth
- Allow you to say no
- Include you without excluding others
- Bring out good in you

Unhealthy friendships:

- Pressure you to compromise yourself
- Make acceptance conditional
- Involve drama, manipulation, or control
- Require you to participate in things you're uncomfortable with
- Make you feel worse about yourself
- Pull you toward destructive behavior

Help them evaluate their friendships: "Do these friends make you better or worse? Do they respect your boundaries?"

4. Validate the difficulty of standing alone

"I know it's really hard to be the only one who says no." "It takes courage to go against the group." "Being different isn't easy, especially in middle school."

Don't minimize how hard this is. Acknowledge it while encouraging them to do the hard thing anyway.

5. Help them find like-minded peers

If they're surrounded by friends who pressure them negatively, help them find other friend groups:

- **Youth group**
- **Sports teams**
- **Clubs or activities**
- **Community groups**
- **Volunteer opportunities**

They need peers who share their values, not just peers who like the same music.

6. Teach them that friendship shouldn't require self-abandonment

**"You shouldn't have to become someone you're not to keep a friendship."
"Real friends like you for who you are, not who you pretend to be." "If you have to compromise yourself to fit in, you're not really fitting in."**

What About When They Make Poor Choices?

They will. They'll give in to peer pressure sometimes. They'll make choices you don't approve of. They'll experiment with things you'd rather they didn't.

When this happens:

1. Don't catastrophize One poor choice doesn't mean they're heading down a destructive path. Keep perspective.

- 2. Use it as a teaching moment "What happened? What were you thinking? What did you learn? What would you do differently?"**
- 3. Apply appropriate consequences Consequences should be logical and educational, not punitive and shame-based.**
- 4. Maintain relationship "I'm disappointed in your choice. I still love you. We're going to work through this together."**
- 5. Look for patterns One incident is a learning opportunity. Repeated patterns indicate a bigger issue that needs more significant intervention.**

Technology, Social Media, and Co-Dependent Validation

This section deserves significant attention because technology and social media have created entirely new arenas for co-dependent dynamics—both for adolescents and their parents.

How Social Media Creates Co-Dependency in Adolescents

Social media is literally designed to create co-dependent patterns:

- Worth measured by likes, comments, followers**
- Constant comparison to curated images of others**
- External validation through metrics**
- Anxiety about being left out (FOMO)**
- Performance of identity for an audience**
- Dopamine hits from social approval**

Your middle schooler is learning: "My worth is determined by how others respond to me. I need constant validation. I should curate my life to get approval."

This is the opposite of what you're trying to teach them.

Parental Co-Dependent Traps with Technology

Parents also fall into co-dependent patterns around their children's technology use:

Trap #1: Needing access to everything Reading every text, monitoring every post, knowing every interaction. This is about your anxiety, not their safety.

Trap #2: Using monitoring as control rather than protection Monitoring should be about safety and teaching discernment, not about eliminating all privacy or controlling every interaction.

Trap #3: Obsessing over their social media Constantly checking their posts, who's commenting, who they're following. Living through their social media life.

Trap #4: Panicking at every online interaction Over-reacting to normal social media drama as if it's life-or-death.

Trap #5: No boundaries around technology Allowing unlimited access because you feel guilty saying no or don't want to be the "mean parent."

Healthy Technology Boundaries for Middle Schoolers

This is complex, but here's a framework:

1. Delay social media as long as possible

Most social media platforms have age requirements (usually 13). Consider delaying further if possible. The longer you can delay, the more mature their brain will be when they do engage.

If you do allow social media:

- **Start with less intense platforms**
- **Have clear rules about what can be posted**
- **Maintain access to accounts (but use it judiciously)**
- **Monitor for signs of negative impact (anxiety, depression, sleep problems, comparison)**

2. Create tech-free zones and times

- **No phones in bedrooms at night**
- **No phones during family meals**
- **No phones during one-on-one time**
- **Device-free time before bed (at least 30 minutes)**
- **One day per week with significantly reduced screen time**

3. Teach digital citizenship

- **What's appropriate to post and what isn't**
- **How to handle online conflict**
- **What to do if someone is inappropriate**
- **The permanence of online content**
- **How to recognize when social media is affecting their mental health**

4. Balance monitoring with privacy

This is the hardest balance to strike. Here's a suggested framework:

You CAN:

- **Require passwords to all accounts**
- **Use monitoring software to flag concerning content (self-harm, sexual content, bullying, dangerous activities)**
- **Spot-check occasionally to ensure they're following the rules**
- **Look at their accounts if you have genuine concern about safety**

You SHOULD NOT:

- **Read every text without cause**
- **Monitor constantly just to know everything**

- **Share what you learn with other parents**
- **Violate privacy to satisfy curiosity**
- **Use what you learn against them in non-safety situations**

**The principle: Trust but verify. Give privacy but maintain oversight.
Monitor for safety without micromanaging.**

5. Discuss the curated reality of social media

"Remember, people post their best moments. Everyone's life has hard parts too." "Likes don't measure worth. You know that, right?" "If social media is making you feel bad about yourself, that's a sign to take a break."

6. Model healthy technology use

They're watching how you use your phone. Are you:

- **Constantly on your phone?**
- **Checking during family time?**
- **Comparing yourself to others online?**
- **Seeking validation through posts?**

You can't teach healthy technology boundaries if you don't have them yourself.

Signs Social Media Is Becoming Unhealthy

Watch for:

- **Increased anxiety or depression**
- **Sleep disruption**
- **Obsessive checking**
- **Comparing themselves negatively to others**
- **Changing themselves to get likes or approval**

- **Social media drama affecting real-life relationships**
- **Withdrawal from family or real-world activities**
- **Self-esteem tied to metrics (likes, followers, comments)**

If you see these signs, it's time to have a conversation about taking a break or establishing different boundaries.

The Co-Dependent Trap of Surveillance

Here's the nuanced truth: monitoring your child's technology use is appropriate. Surveillance-level control is not.

Monitoring (healthy): "I'm going to check your phone occasionally to make sure you're being safe online. If I find something concerning, we'll talk about it."

Surveillance (unhealthy): "I'm reading every text you send because I need to know everything about your life. You have no privacy because I don't trust you."

The difference:

- **Monitoring is about safety and teaching**
- **Surveillance is about control and anxiety**
- **Monitoring respects growing autonomy while maintaining oversight**
- **Surveillance treats them like they can't be trusted at all**
- **Monitoring is transparent ("I will occasionally check...")**
- **Surveillance is secretive (using spy apps they don't know about)**

If you find yourself obsessively checking their phone, lying awake worried about what they might be doing online, feeling unable to function without knowing every detail—this is about your anxiety, not their safety. Work on this in therapy.

Emotions and Hormones: Staying Steady While They're Not

Middle schoolers are emotionally volatile. Hormones, brain development, social stress, academic pressure, and identity formation create perfect conditions for emotional storms.

They might:

- **Cry over things that seem small to you**
- **Explode in anger at minor frustrations**
- **Oscillate between happiness and despair multiple times per day**
- **Say hurtful things they don't mean**
- **Have disproportionate reactions**
- **Be unable to explain why they feel what they feel**

This is normal. Their emotional brain is in hyperdrive while their regulatory systems are still developing. They literally cannot control their emotions the way adults can.

Your Job: Be the Steady One

Your middle schooler needs you to remain regulated when they're not. They need an anchor, not another storm.

When they're emotionally dysregulated, you must stay emotionally regulated.

This is perhaps the hardest aspect of parenting middle schoolers, especially for co-dependent parents who tend to:

- **Take on their child's emotions**
- **Become upset when they're upset**
- **React defensively when they're attacking**
- **Need them to calm down so you can calm down**

But they need you to model regulation, not mirror their dysregulation.

How to Stay Steady

1. Remember it's not about you

When they yell "I hate you!" they don't actually hate you. They're overwhelmed and you're safe enough to be their target.

When they slam doors and stomp around, they're not doing it TO you. They're expressing emotions they don't know how to handle.

When they're sobbing over something that seems trivial, it's not trivial to them.

2. Don't escalate

Match intensity with calm, not with more intensity.

**They yell → You speak quietly They're dramatic → You're matter-of-fact
They're attacking → You're steady They're out of control → You're in control of yourself**

3. Give them space to feel without making it about you

"You're really upset right now. I'm going to give you some space. When you're ready to talk, I'm here."

NOT: "Don't you dare talk to me that way! I'm so hurt by how you're treating me! After everything I do for you!"

4. Validate without fixing

"That sounds really hard." "I can see you're hurting." "Middle school is tough."

You don't need to solve it, explain it away, or make the feeling stop. Just acknowledge it.

5. Set boundaries on behavior while accepting feelings

"It's okay to be angry. It's not okay to slam doors/yell/be disrespectful. When you've calmed down, we'll talk about a better way to handle this."

Feelings are always acceptable. Behavior has limits.

6. Take care of your own emotional regulation

When they're dysregulated:

- **Take deep breaths**
- **Give yourself a time-out if you need it ("I need a minute before we talk about this")**
- **Remember this is a stage, not forever**
- **Pray for wisdom and patience**
- **Process your own feelings later (not with them)**

The Co-Dependent Trap of Emotional Enmeshment

Co-dependent parents become emotionally enmeshed with their middle schooler's mood swings:

- **Their bad mood ruins your day**
- **You can't be happy if they're not**
- **You take their anger personally**
- **You need them to feel better so you can feel better**
- **Their emotional state controls your emotional state**

This makes their development about you rather than about them learning to regulate themselves.

Signs you're emotionally enmeshed:

- **"Her bad mood ruined our whole evening"**
- **"I can't enjoy anything when I know he's struggling"**
- **"When she's upset, I'm upset"**
- **"I need him to be okay so I can be okay"**

- You're constantly trying to cheer them up or fix their feelings
- You feel responsible for their emotional state

The healthier approach:

- "She's having a hard day. I'm steady. I'm available if she needs me."
- "He's struggling with something. I feel sad for him, but I'm managing my own emotions."
- "Her feelings are hers. Mine are mine. Both are okay."
- "I can stay calm while she works through this."

You are not responsible for their emotions. They are learning to manage them. Your calm presence teaches them regulation, not your anxious over-involvement.

Teaching Them Emotional Regulation Skills

While staying steady yourself, you can also teach them skills:

- 1. Name the emotion "You seem really frustrated right now. Is that right?"**
- 2. Normalize it "It makes sense to feel that way given what happened."**
- 3. Offer coping strategies "What usually helps when you feel this way? Want to go for a walk? Listen to music? Be alone for a bit?"**
- 4. Discuss patterns later When they're calm: "I noticed you've been having a really hard time with frustration lately. Let's brainstorm some strategies for handling it."**
- 5. Model your own regulation "I'm feeling really frustrated right now. I'm going to take some deep breaths and take a walk before we continue this conversation."**

They're learning by watching you more than by listening to you.

Creating Space for Hard Conversations Without Judgment

Middle schoolers need to be able to talk to you about hard things:

- Peer pressure
- Sexual feelings and questions
- Doubts and struggles
- Mistakes they've made
- Things they're worried about
- Questions about adult topics

But they won't bring these things to you if they expect judgment, lectures, or over-reaction.

How to Create Safe Space

1. Stay calm when they share hard things

If they tell you something alarming, your first response sets the tone for future conversations.

Take a breath. Stay outwardly calm (even if you're panicking inside). Respond thoughtfully, not reactively.

"Thank you for telling me. That takes courage. Let's talk about this."

NOT: "WHAT?! How could you?! I can't believe this! You're grounded forever!"

2. Ask questions before jumping to conclusions

"Tell me more about what happened." "Help me understand your thinking." "What were you hoping would happen?"

Seek to understand before correcting or teaching.

3. Separate the behavior from the person

"I don't like this choice you made. I love you. Let's figure out how to move forward."

NOT: "I'm so disappointed in you. You're making such bad choices. What happened to the good kid I raised?"

4. Avoid lectures

Middle schoolers stop listening about 30 seconds into a lecture. Keep your responses shorter and ask questions to help them process.

Instead of a 20-minute lecture on the dangers of vaping: "What do you know about vaping? What concerns you about it? What do you think the right choice is here?"

5. Express your values without shaming theirs

"Here's what I believe and why. What do you think?"

This opens dialogue rather than shutting it down.

6. Thank them for telling you

Even when what they're telling you is hard to hear:

"I'm glad you told me." "I appreciate that you trusted me with this." "This is important and I'm glad we're talking about it."

This increases the likelihood they'll keep coming to you.

Topics That Require Hard Conversations

Sex and sexuality: Middle school is when sexual feelings emerge and questions intensify. If you don't create space for these conversations, they'll get their information elsewhere (peers, internet).

Approach: "I want you to know you can ask me anything about bodies, sex, relationships—anything. I'll answer honestly and age-appropriately. And I won't freak out."

Substance use: By middle school, many kids have been offered alcohol, vaping, or drugs. They need to be able to talk to you about pressure, questions, or mistakes.

Approach: "I know you're at an age where you might be offered [substances]. I want you to know what I believe about this and why, and I want to hear your thoughts and questions."

Mental health: Anxiety and depression often emerge in middle school. They need to know these are topics they can discuss.

Approach: "If you're ever feeling really down or anxious, I want you to tell me. Mental health is just as important as physical health, and we'll get you help if you need it."

Social media and technology: Ongoing conversations about what they're experiencing online, including uncomfortable interactions or content.

Approach: "If you ever see something online that makes you uncomfortable or someone messages you something inappropriate, you can tell me. You won't be in trouble for telling me."

Co-Dependent Traps to Avoid: Middle School Edition

Let's specifically name the co-dependent patterns most common during the middle school years:

Trap #1: Needing Them to Be Your "Good Kid" for Your Reputation

What it looks like:

- **Being more concerned about what other parents think than about your child's actual wellbeing**
- **Embarrassment about their appearance, choices, or behavior**
- **Pressure to present a perfect image**
- **Making their struggles about your shame**
- **Comparing them (favorably or unfavorably) to other kids**

Why it's co-dependent: You've made their identity about your identity. You need them to make you look good. This is about your worth, not their development.

What to do instead:

- Remember they're their own person with their own journey
- Release concern about what others think
- Support them even when it's uncomfortable for you
- Value their authentic development over perfect presentation

Trap #2: Reading Their Texts/Journals Without Cause

What it looks like:

- Routinely reading all their private communications
- Reading their journal or diary
- Monitoring not for safety but for control and information
- Violating privacy to satisfy your need to know everything

Why it's co-dependent: You can't tolerate them having a private internal life. You need access to everything. This is about your anxiety, not their safety.

What to do instead:

- Give age-appropriate privacy
- Monitor for safety concerns but don't surveil
- Trust them until they give you reason not to
- Work on your own anxiety about not knowing everything

Trap #3: Befriending Their Friends to Monitor Relationships

What it looks like:

- Trying to be the "cool parent" all their friends love
- Getting too involved in their social dynamics
- Befriending their friends on social media to monitor

- **Creating situations where you're always present in their social life**
- **Pumping their friends for information about your child**

Why it's co-dependent: You can't let them have relationships separate from you. You need to be involved in everything. This prevents healthy separation and is often about your loneliness or need to be liked.

What to do instead:

- **Be friendly but not friends with their peers**
- **Give them social space**
- **Don't insert yourself into their friendships**
- **Get your social needs met by other adults**

Trap #4: Making Their Mood Swings About You

What it looks like:

- **Taking their emotional volatility personally**
- **Needing them to be in a good mood so you can be**
- **Feeling hurt by their normal developmental push-away**
- **Making their struggles about how it affects you**
- **Requiring emotional stability from them to maintain yours**

Why it's co-dependent: You've made their emotions your responsibility. You can't separate their feelings from yours. This makes their development about your needs.

What to do instead:

- **Stay emotionally regulated regardless of their mood**
- **Remember mood swings are developmental, not personal attacks**
- **Maintain your own emotional life separately from theirs**

- Give them space to be emotionally volatile while you stay steady

Trap #5: Preventing All Social Pain or Rejection

What it looks like:

- Intervening in every friendship conflict
- Calling other parents about social drama
- Trying to engineer friendships
- Not letting them experience exclusion or rejection
- Making social difficulties about your pain

Why it's co-dependent: You can't tolerate their pain, which is about your discomfort, not their needs. You're preventing them from developing resilience and social skills.

What to do instead:

- Let them navigate most social challenges themselves
- Coach rather than intervene
- Trust that social pain, while difficult, is a teacher
- Stay supportive without rescuing

Trap #6: Over-Identifying With Their Experience

What it looks like:

- "We didn't get picked for the team" (it's not about you)
- Reliving your own middle school through theirs
- Projecting your experience onto them
- Making their struggles resurrect your old wounds
- Being more upset about their social life than they are

Why it's co-dependent: You've merged their identity with yours. You can't see them as separate from you. This is about unresolved issues from your own adolescence.

What to do instead:

- **Work on your own middle school wounds in therapy**
- **Remember their experience is not yours**
- **See them as separate individuals with separate journeys**
- **Process your own feelings separately from theirs**

Preparing Them for Increased Independence

The middle school years are preparation for the high school years, which are preparation for launch. Each year should include increasing independence and responsibility.

Independence Benchmarks for Middle School

By the end of middle school (around age 14), your child should be able to:

Practically:

- **Manage their own schedule mostly independently**
- **Complete homework without reminders**
- **Do their own laundry**
- **Prepare simple meals**
- **Navigate their neighborhood safely**
- **Use public transportation or walk places (when appropriate)**
- **Manage their own belongings and space**
- **Wake themselves up and get ready independently**

Emotionally:

- Regulate most emotions without your intervention
- Solve most peer problems themselves
- Ask for help when they need it
- Self-soothe when upset
- Handle disappointment without falling apart

Socially:

- Make and maintain friendships
- Advocate for themselves with adults
- Resolve most conflicts independently
- Set basic boundaries
- Participate in activities without you present

Decision-making:

- Make most daily decisions themselves
- Consider consequences before acting (at least sometimes)
- Learn from mistakes
- Manage small amounts of money
- Choose appropriate activities and commitments

If your middle schooler isn't able to do most of these things, it's time to deliberately teach and release these skills.

How to Increase Independence

1. Transfer one new responsibility each month

Pick something they're ready for and teach it thoroughly, then release it.

2. Give them a wider radius

Literally and figuratively—let them go more places, do more things, have more autonomy.

3. Stop reminding

Let natural consequences teach instead of your nagging.

4. Ask "What do you think you should do?" instead of telling them

Build their decision-making muscles.

5. Let them fail at things

They learn more from failure than from you preventing all mistakes.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- **Middle schoolers simultaneously need you and push you away—this is developmental, not personal**
- **Identity exploration is necessary for healthy development; distinguish between style choices and safety concerns**
- **Peer relationships become central; teach them to trust their own voice while navigating social pressure**
- **Technology and social media require thoughtful boundaries that balance safety monitoring with respect for privacy**
- **Emotional volatility is normal; your job is to stay regulated while they're not**
- **Creating safe space for hard conversations requires staying calm, asking questions, and avoiding lectures**
- **Co-dependent traps include needing them to be your "good kid," surveillance-level monitoring, emotional enmeshment, and preventing all social pain**

Remember: The middle schooler who learns "I can figure out who I am" becomes the adult who knows their identity in Christ, not in others' opinions. Your job is to stay connected while giving them space to explore, to provide guidance without control, and to remain steady while they're finding their footing.

Action Steps This Week:

- 1. Identify one area where you're being overly controlling and practice stepping back**
- 2. Have one "just connecting" conversation with your middle schooler without any agenda**
- 3. Review your technology boundaries—are they about safety or about control?**
- 4. Write down three ways you can stay emotionally regulated when they're dysregulated**
- 5. Identify one area where you can increase their independence this month**

Reflection Questions:

- 1. How do you respond when your middle schooler pushes you away? Can you not take it personally? What makes that hard?**
- 2. What aspects of their identity exploration trigger anxiety in you? Are these safety issues or control issues?**
- 3. How do your own middle school wounds show up in how you parent your adolescent? What do you need to work on?**
- 4. Are your technology boundaries about safety or about your need to know everything? Where's the line?**

5. How emotionally enmeshed are you with your middle schooler's moods? Can you stay steady when they're not?
 6. What hard conversations have you been avoiding? What would it take to create safe space for those?
-

Prayer for Parents of Middle Schoolers:

Father, these years are so hard—for them and for me. Give me wisdom to know when to step in and when to step back. Help me stay steady when they're all over the place emotionally. Give me the courage to let them explore who they are, even when it scares me. Help me release control while maintaining connection. Teach me to trust You with their development, their friendships, their questions, and their struggles. Help me not take their push-away personally, but see it as the necessary work of growing up. Give them safe spaces to figure out who they are and who You created them to be. Protect them from harm while allowing them to learn from mistakes. And help me do my own work—healing my own middle school wounds, managing my own anxiety, and staying emotionally separate while remaining lovingly connected. I trust You with their journey. I surrender my need to control. Help me parent from freedom. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"Trust in the Lord with all your heart and do not lean on your own understanding. In all your ways acknowledge Him, and He will make your paths straight."

—Proverbs 3:5-6 (NASB)

"'For I know the plans that I have for you,' declares the Lord, 'plans for welfare and not for calamity to give you a future and a hope.'"

—Jeremiah 29:11 (NASB)

CHAPTER 7

Teens and Young Adults (Ages 15-18+): Preparing for Launch

"As iron sharpens iron, so one man sharpens another."

—Proverbs 27:17 (NASB)

David sat across from his 17-year-old son, Matt, in the financial aid office of a state university two hours from home. The counselor was explaining the scholarship package, the remaining costs, and the student loan options.

Matt was asking good questions. He was taking notes. He was calculating numbers.

David felt a strange mixture of pride and panic. Pride because Matt was handling this like an adult. Panic because this was actually happening—his son was leaving in four months.

On the drive home, Matt said, "I think I can make this work with my savings from my summer job and a small loan. It's going to be tight, but I can do it."

David heard himself say, "Well, your mom and I could cover more. We don't want you to struggle. We could pay for—"

Matt interrupted gently. "Dad, I've got this. You and Mom have already done so much. This is my responsibility now."

David opened his mouth to argue, to offer more help, to find a way to stay more involved. Then he caught himself.

What am I doing? I'm about to undermine his capability and confidence because I can't handle letting go.

He took a breath. "You're right. You've got this. And we're here if there's an emergency, but you're capable of managing this."

Matt smiled. "Thanks, Dad."

In that moment, David had a choice: he could keep his son financially dependent (and therefore still under his control), or he could let his son step into adult responsibility. He could parent from his own anxiety and need, or he could parent from trust and freedom.

The high school years (roughly ages 15-18, extending into early college years) are the final preparation for launch. Everything you've been working toward since they were toddlers culminates in these critical years. This is when you deliberately, intentionally, systematically work yourself out of a job.

For co-dependent parents, these are the most terrifying years because they require massive release. Your child is becoming an adult. Your role is shifting from parent to consultant. Your authority is diminishing while your influence (if you've built it well) can increase. You're preparing them to leave—and preparing yourself to let them go.

This chapter will guide you through these final years of preparation, helping you release control while maintaining connection, allow them to make adult decisions (and adult mistakes) while still providing a safety net, and ultimately send them into adulthood equipped, confident, and free.

Increasing Freedom with Increasing Responsibility

The fundamental principle of the teenage years is this: **Freedom and responsibility increase together.**

More freedom requires more responsibility. More responsibility earns more freedom. These two should always be proportional.

Co-dependent parents make two critical mistakes:

1. **Giving freedom without requiring responsibility** (permissive/enabling parenting)
2. **Requiring responsibility without giving freedom** (controlling parenting)

Healthy parenting during these years means: "As you demonstrate responsibility, you earn more freedom. As you want more freedom, you take on more responsibility."

The Graduated Independence Model

Think of the high school years as a gradual transfer of adult responsibilities and privileges. Each year, month, and even week should include progressive release.

Age 15-16:

- **Driving:** Learner's permit, then license with restrictions
- **Employment:** First job opportunities
- **Money:** Managing their own spending money, saving for larger purchases
- **Social:** Later curfews, more autonomy in friend choices
- **School:** Complete independence in homework, choosing classes, managing schedule
- **Household:** Full responsibility for their own space, laundry, meal preparation participation
- **Decision-making:** Choosing most extracurriculars, how to spend their time

Age 17-18:

- **Driving:** Full license, perhaps own car (if they can help pay for insurance/gas)
- **Employment:** Regular job with scheduling responsibilities
- **Money:** Managing larger sums, contributing to household expenses if working

- **Social:** Later curfews or no curfew (with expectations about communication)
- **School:** Choosing college or post-graduation path
- **Household:** Contributing to household in significant ways
- **Decision-making:** Making most daily decisions independently

Age 18+:

- **Legal adulthood:** Full adult rights and responsibilities
- **Residence:** May be living away from home
- **Finances:** Managing own income, expenses, banking
- **Healthcare:** Making own medical decisions
- **Education/Career:** Full ownership of their path
- **Household:** If living at home, adult contribution (rent or equivalent, full self-management)

How to Implement Graduated Independence

1. Make expectations and privileges clear

Don't assume they know what's expected. Be explicit.

"Now that you're 16 and have your license, here are the driving rules and what happens if they're violated."

"You want to stay out until midnight on weekends. Let's talk about what responsibilities need to be in place for that to happen."

2. Connect privileges to demonstrated responsibility

"When you show me you can manage your current curfew consistently—coming home on time, communicating when plans change—we'll discuss extending it."

"You can have more independence with money when you show you can budget the money you currently manage."

3. Review and adjust regularly

Every few months, have a conversation:

- What's working?
- What's not working?
- What's the next area of independence?
- What responsibility needs to accompany it?

4. Don't rescue from consequences

If they violate a privilege (break curfew, lie about where they are, damage the car), the consequence should be clear and enforced.

Lost trust = Lost privilege (temporarily)

They can earn it back through consistent responsible behavior.

5. Celebrate increasing maturity

"I notice you've been really responsible about [specific area]. I'm proud of the adult you're becoming. Let's talk about the next level of freedom."

The Car Conversation: A Case Study

Getting a driver's license and access to a car is one of the biggest freedom-responsibility negotiations of the teenage years. Here's how to handle it without falling into co-dependent patterns:

Co-dependent approach:

- You buy them a car, pay for everything (insurance, gas, maintenance)
- You don't require them to contribute financially
- When they're irresponsible (speeding tickets, accidents, not maintaining the car), you still provide access

- You use the car as a manipulation tool ("If you don't do what I want, I'll take your car")
- You either give complete freedom or maintain complete control (no middle ground)

Healthy approach: "You've earned your license. Here's how car access will work:

- You can use the family car for school, work, and activities we approve
- You'll pay for half the insurance increase and your own gas
- If you get a ticket or have an at-fault accident, you lose access for [timeframe] and pay all associated costs
- Curfew is [time]. If you're going to be late, you call. If you're late without calling, you lose car privileges for [timeframe]
- The car must be returned with at least 1/4 tank of gas
- If you want to buy your own car, we'll match your savings up to [amount] and help you find a reliable used vehicle

As you demonstrate responsibility with these rules over the next 6 months, we'll revisit and possibly extend privileges."

This is clear, fair, teaches responsibility, and has natural consequences built in.

When They Fail

They will fail. They'll break curfew. They'll get a speeding ticket. They'll spend all their money impulsively. They'll make poor choices.

This is the curriculum.

Better to fail at 17 with your safety net still there than to fail at 22 with no support system. Use failures as teaching opportunities:

"What happened?" "What were you thinking?" "What did you learn?" "What will you do differently?" "What's the consequence, and how will you handle it?"

Don't rescue. Don't "fix it." Let them experience the full weight of their choices—while they're still living under your roof and have your support.

Mistakes Are the Curriculum: Let Them Fail Safely While Home

This principle is so important it deserves its own section. **The high school years are the time to let them make mistakes—significant ones—while they still have your support.**

Co-dependent parents fear their teenager's mistakes because:

- You feel responsible for their choices
- Their failures feel like your failures
- You're afraid of long-term consequences
- You can't tolerate watching them suffer
- You need them to succeed to validate your parenting

But here's the truth: **Mistakes made at 16-18, with your safety net, are infinitely better than mistakes made at 20-25 without support.**

Categories of Mistakes to Allow

Financial mistakes:

- Spending all their money impulsively
- Not saving for something they want
- Missing a payment on a phone bill or car insurance
- Making a bad purchase decision
- Not budgeting properly

Academic mistakes:

- Failing a class
- Not studying for a test
- Procrastinating on a major project
- Choosing classes that are too easy or too hard

Social mistakes:

- Getting involved with the wrong friend group
- Being a bad friend
- Trusting someone who betrays them
- Experiencing romantic heartbreak

Responsibility mistakes:

- Missing work and losing a job
- Being late repeatedly and experiencing consequences
- Not following through on commitments
- Breaking promises

Judgment mistakes:

- Making risky decisions (within reason)
- Trusting the wrong people
- Mismanaging time or priorities
- Making choices you warned them against

What You Do When They Make These Mistakes

1. Don't rescue

Let them experience the full natural consequence:

- Spent all their money? They can't buy what they want.

- Failed a class? They retake it or it affects their GPA.
- Lost their job? They don't have income and must find another job.
- Got a speeding ticket? They pay it and deal with insurance increase.

2. Provide emotional support, not material rescue

"I know this is really hard. I'm here to listen and support you emotionally. But this consequence is yours to handle."

NOT: "Here, I'll pay for it this time" or "Let me call and fix this for you."

3. Help them process and learn

"What happened?" "What led to this decision?" "What were you hoping would happen?" "What actually happened?" "What did you learn?" "What would you do differently next time?"

4. Express confidence in their ability to handle it

"This is tough, but I know you can get through it." "You're capable of figuring this out." "What's your plan for handling this?"

5. Let them sit with discomfort

Don't immediately distract them or make them feel better. Growth happens in discomfort.

6. Celebrate the learning

When they've worked through it: "I'm proud of how you handled that. That was mature. You learned something valuable."

Mistakes NOT to Allow

There are limits. Some mistakes have consequences too severe to allow:

Don't allow mistakes that:

- Risk serious physical harm or death (drinking and driving, dangerous illegal activities)

- Risk legal consequences that will follow them into adulthood (serious crimes)
- Seriously harm others
- Involve clear abuse or exploitation

For these situations, you intervene with:

- Clear boundaries and consequences
- Immediate action (removing them from situations, involving authorities if necessary)
- Professional help (therapy, substance abuse treatment, legal counsel)

The difference: Most mistakes are learning opportunities with temporary consequences. Some mistakes have permanent life-altering consequences. Use wisdom to distinguish between them.

The Story of Matt and the Failed Class

Matt (from the beginning of this chapter) was a strong student who decided senior year that he'd coast in AP Calculus. He stopped doing homework, barely studied, and failed the midterm.

His parents received a notification from the teacher. David's instinct was to immediately intervene: email the teacher, require Matt to go to tutoring, stand over him while he did homework, remove privileges until the grade improved.

Instead, David said to Matt: "I see you're failing Calculus. That's concerning. What's your plan?"

Matt shrugged. "I don't know. I hate that class."

"Well, if you fail it, you won't graduate on time. That's the consequence. What are you going to do about it?"

"I guess I need to start actually doing the work."

"Okay. That's your choice. Let me know if you want help getting a tutor or studying. But this is your responsibility, not mine."

Matt was furious that his dad wasn't going to fix it for him. But over the next few weeks, he realized the consequence was real. He sought out a tutor. He started doing the homework. He passed the class with a C.

Two years later, in college, when Matt hit a difficult class, he knew what to do: get help, do the work, take responsibility. He'd learned the lesson because his dad let him fail (almost) and then recover.

Money, Jobs, and Learning Financial Responsibility

Financial preparation is one of the most overlooked aspects of preparing teenagers for adulthood. Many young adults leave home with no idea how to budget, save, manage debt, or live within their means.

Financial co-dependency—where parents continue to fund their adult children's lifestyle—is rampant and damaging. The pattern starts in the teenage years.

Why Financial Independence Matters

Financial dependence creates ongoing control. If you're funding their life, you maintain authority over their choices. This prevents adult individuation.

Many co-dependent parents unconsciously maintain financial control because:

- It keeps the child needing them
- It gives them ongoing influence over decisions
- It allows them to "help" (which they need to do)
- It prevents the child from being fully independent

But financial dependence prevents your child from:

- Learning to manage money

- Making financial decisions and learning from mistakes
- Living within their means
- Understanding the relationship between work and lifestyle
- Becoming fully adult

Financial Skills to Teach Before They Leave Home

By graduation, your teenager should understand:

1. How to budget

- Tracking income and expenses
- Categorizing spending
- Distinguishing needs from wants
- Planning for irregular expenses
- Living below your means

2. How banking works

- Opening and managing checking/savings accounts
- Understanding interest
- Avoiding overdrafts and fees
- Online banking and bill pay
- Credit vs. debit

3. How credit works

- What credit is and how it works
- Interest rates and compound interest
- Credit scores and why they matter
- Dangers of credit card debt

- Student loans (if applicable)

4. How to earn money

- Getting a job
- Understanding paychecks, taxes, deductions
- Professional behavior and work ethic
- Negotiating pay
- Managing a work schedule

5. How to manage bills

- What bills adults have (rent, utilities, phone, insurance, etc.)
- How to set up automatic payments
- Consequences of late payments
- How much things actually cost

6. Basic financial values

- Giving/tithing
- Saving for goals
- Emergency funds
- Living within means
- Avoiding debt when possible

Practical Steps to Teach Financial Responsibility

Ages 15-16:

- **Get a job:** Summer or part-time work
- **Manage spending money:** Give them a clothing budget and let them manage it

- **Open a checking account:** Teach them to monitor it
- **Start saving:** Help them set a savings goal and work toward it
- **Learn about bills:** Show them your family budget—what things actually cost

Ages 17-18:

- **Pay for some of their own expenses:** Phone bill, car insurance (portion), gas, entertainment
- **Create a budget:** Help them make a budget for their income
- **Experience financial consequences:** Let them run out of money and not bail them out
- **Discuss college financing:** If applicable, be realistic about costs and their contribution
- **Practice adult financial decisions:** Let them choose and pay for some larger purchases

Ages 18+:

- **Full financial responsibility:** They pay for everything they can with their income
- **Contribution to household:** If living at home, pay rent or equivalent contribution
- **Manage student loans/college costs:** Understand what they're taking on
- **Build credit responsibly:** Perhaps a secured credit card with their own management
- **Plan for independence:** Understand what financial independence requires

The "Launch Budget" Exercise

Around age 17, sit down with your teenager and create a "launch budget"—what would it actually cost them to live independently?

Research together:

- Rent (in your area or where they plan to live)
- Utilities
- Food/groceries
- Transportation (car payment, insurance, gas, maintenance OR public transit)
- Phone
- Internet
- Healthcare/insurance
- Clothing
- Personal care
- Entertainment
- Savings
- Giving/tithing

Total it up.

Then look at realistic entry-level salaries in their field of interest.

Calculate: After taxes, can they afford this lifestyle?

This exercise is sobering and educational. It teaches them:

- What adult life actually costs
- Why education/career choices matter
- The relationship between income and lifestyle
- Why living at home after 18 might be wise for a time

- The value of financial planning

The Co-Dependent Money Trap

Co-dependent parents often:

- Fund their child's lifestyle indefinitely
- Pay for things the young adult should pay for themselves
- Bail them out of financial mistakes repeatedly
- Use money to maintain control or influence decisions
- Can't say no when their adult child asks for money
- Enable irresponsible financial behavior

Signs you're financially enmeshed:

- Your 20-something is still on your phone plan, insurance, streaming services (and not contributing)
- You regularly give them money for "emergencies" that aren't really emergencies
- You can't afford to give them money but do it anyway
- You're enabling a lifestyle they can't actually afford
- They make poor financial choices knowing you'll bail them out
- You use money to control their decisions ("I'll pay for this college but not that one")

The healthier approach:

Ages 15-18: "We'll provide basic necessities. You're responsible for [specific expenses]. We'll help you learn to manage money. We won't bail you out of poor financial choices."

Age 18+: "You're an adult now. Here's what we will and won't help with financially. [Be specific.] Beyond that, you're responsible for your own financial life."

Then stick to it. If they make poor choices, let them experience consequences. If they ask for money beyond what you've agreed to, the answer is no (or it's a loan with clear terms).

This isn't cruel. It's loving them into adult financial responsibility.

Dating, Relationships, and Healthy Boundaries

The teenage and young adult years are when romantic relationships typically begin. How you navigate this area will significantly impact your child's ability to form healthy relationships—or tendency toward co-dependent ones.

Your Goals in This Area

You want your teenager/young adult to learn:

- How to have healthy romantic relationships with appropriate boundaries
- How to recognize red flags in relationships
- How to set and maintain boundaries (physical, emotional, time)
- How to handle conflict in relationships
- How to end unhealthy relationships
- How to not lose themselves in relationships
- Their worth isn't determined by relationship status
- Attraction and feelings are normal but don't have to dictate behavior

You DON'T want them to learn:

- Enmeshed relationships are normal
- Their worth comes from being in a relationship

- They should compromise their values for love
- Relationships should be all-consuming
- Jealousy and control are signs of love
- They can't function without a romantic partner

How to Navigate Their Romantic Relationships

1. Have honest conversations about sex, attraction, and boundaries

Don't avoid these conversations because they're uncomfortable. By high school, they need honest, biblical guidance about:

- Sexual attraction and feelings (normal and God-created)
- Biblical sexual ethics and why they matter
- Physical boundaries and why they protect
- Consent and respect in relationships
- How to set boundaries and maintain them
- What to do when boundaries are violated

Approach: "Let's talk about relationships and sex. I know you're at an age where these topics are relevant. I want to share what I believe and why, and I want to hear your questions."

Don't lecture. Dialogue.

2. Set clear boundaries for dating/relationships

What are your family rules?

- Group activities only until what age?
- What level of physical affection is acceptable at home?
- Curfew expectations?
- Meeting the person they're dating?

- Boundaries around time together?

Be clear, be reasonable, and enforce consistently.

3. Don't forbid relationships or overcontrol

Forbidden relationships become irresistible. Overcontrol leads to sneaking and lying.

Unless there's genuine danger (age inappropriate relationship, abusive person, illegal situation), allow them to date with appropriate boundaries.

4. Meet the person they're dating

Don't be invasive, but do meet them. Have them to dinner. Get to know them casually. This shows you're interested and gives you information.

5. Share concerns carefully

If you have concerns about the relationship, share them thoughtfully:

"I've noticed [specific observation]. I'm concerned about [specific concern]. What do you think?"

NOT: "I hate them. You need to break up. They're terrible for you."

6. Let them experience heartbreak

Teenage/young adult romantic heartbreak is painful. Your instinct will be to protect them from it or to fix it. Don't.

Heartbreak is a profound teacher. It teaches:

- How to survive difficult emotions
- How to recover from loss
- How to evaluate what they want in relationships
- That they can be okay even after devastating disappointment

When they're heartbroken:

- Be present

- Listen
- Validate the pain ("This really hurts. I know.")
- Don't minimize ("You'll find someone else" or "You're too young for this to matter")
- Don't trash the ex (they might get back together)
- Let them grieve

7. Watch for unhealthy patterns

Concerning signs:

- Isolation from friends/family
- Changes in personality or values to please the partner
- Partner is controlling or jealous
- Lying to you about the relationship
- Signs of emotional, physical, or sexual abuse
- Complete emotional dependence on the relationship
- Dramatic on-again/off-again patterns
- Neglecting responsibilities for the relationship

If you see these patterns, address them:

"I'm concerned about [specific pattern]. This doesn't seem healthy. Let's talk about what healthy relationships look like."

If needed, involve a therapist or counselor.

8. Model healthy relationships

They're learning from watching you. If you and your spouse have an enmeshed, co-dependent relationship, they're learning that's normal. If you maintain healthy boundaries, independence, and interdependence, they're learning that model.

The Co-Dependent Traps in This Area

Trap #1: Needing them to be in/not be in a relationship for your needs

Some parents need their teenager to be in a relationship (living vicariously). Others need them NOT to be in a relationship (wanting to keep them close, fearing sex, or fearing loss of control).

Both are about you, not them.

Trap #2: Making their relationship your relationship

Getting overly involved in their romantic life—befriending the partner, constantly asking for details, living through their relationship drama.

Trap #3: Not allowing any privacy in relationships

Needing to know everything, reading their messages, interrogating them about every interaction.

Trap #4: Preventing all heartbreak

Trying to control who they date to prevent pain, or over-involving yourself when relationships end.

Trap #5: Projecting your experiences onto them

If you had negative romantic experiences as a teen, you might be hypervigilant or project your issues onto their relationships.

The Biblical Framework

Biblical teaching on relationships emphasizes:

- Purity and honoring God with our bodies (1 Corinthians 6:18-20)
- Mutual respect and submission (Ephesians 5:21)
- Love as patient, kind, not self-seeking (1 Corinthians 13:4-7)
- Not being unequally yoked (2 Corinthians 6:14)
- Marriage as reflecting Christ and the church (Ephesians 5:25-33)

Teach these principles, model them in your marriage, and then trust them to apply them in their own relationships.

You can't control their choices in this area. You can only equip them with truth, pray for them, and trust God with their journey.

Spiritual Formation: Their Faith, Not Your Faith

Perhaps no area reveals co-dependent patterns more clearly than how parents handle their teenager's spiritual life. Many Christian parents panic when their high schooler questions faith, stops being enthusiastic about church, or seems to be walking away from what they were taught.

But here's a critical truth: **Your teenager must own their faith for it to be real. That requires questioning, wrestling, and sometimes doubting what they inherited.**

The Difference Between Inherited Faith and Owned Faith

Inherited faith:

- Belief because parents believe
- Participation because parents require it
- Answers memorized but not internalized
- Compliance without conviction
- "Borrowed" faith that may not survive crisis

Owned faith:

- Belief because they've wrestled and chosen
- Participation because it's meaningful to them
- Questions asked and worked through
- Conviction based on personal encounter with God
- Tested faith that can withstand challenge

The transition from inherited to owned faith typically happens in late adolescence/young adulthood. This process often looks like doubt, questions, resistance, or pulling away—and it terrifies parents.

Why Teenagers Question Faith

Developmentally normal reasons:

- They're developing abstract thinking and can now see complexities and contradictions
- They're forming their own identity separate from parents
- They're encountering different worldviews and perspectives
- They're experiencing suffering and asking hard questions
- They want to test whether faith "works" outside their family system

Sometimes unhealthy reasons:

- Hypocrisy they've witnessed in the church or family
- Legalism or control in how faith was presented
- Trauma associated with church
- Rebellion against parental authority extending to God
- Peer influence toward unbelief

Regardless of the reason, your response matters more than their questioning.

How to Support Their Spiritual Journey

1. Create safety for questions and doubts

"You can ask me anything about faith. I won't be shocked or disappointed. Questions are part of growing faith."

When they express doubts: "Tell me more about that. What's making you question this?"

Don't shut down questions with: "You just need to have faith" or "Don't question God!"

2. Share your own doubts and journey

"I've struggled with that question too. Here's how I've worked through it..."

"I don't have all the answers either. Sometimes I doubt. Here's what I do with that..."

This normalizes questioning and shows faith is strong enough to survive doubt.

3. Distinguish between faith and church attendance

You can require church attendance while they're minors living at home (it's a family value and practice). But you can't force faith.

"As part of this family, we attend church together. When you're 18 and independent, you'll make your own choices about faith and church. But while you're here, this is our family practice."

Be clear this is about behavior (attendance) not about controlling their beliefs.

4. Connect them with other trusted adults

Sometimes teenagers can't hear from parents what they can hear from other adults. Connect them with:

- Youth pastors or ministers
- Mentors
- Christian friends
- Apologists who address tough questions
- Books by authors who wrestle honestly with faith

5. Pray for and with them (when they're willing)

"I'm praying for you as you work through these questions."

If they're willing: "Can I pray with you about this?"

If not: Pray privately and trust God is at work.

6. Remember: God loves them more than you do

This might be the hardest thing to accept: God loves your child more than you do, and He's more invested in their faith than you are.

Your job is to plant and water. God gives the growth (1 Corinthians 3:6-7).

7. Don't make every conversation about faith

If the only time you deeply engage with your teenager is to address their faith (or lack thereof), they'll associate you with pressure and control.

Maintain connection around many topics. Let them know you love them regardless of where they are with faith.

8. Let them see authentic faith in you

The most powerful apologetic is a parent who lives genuine, vibrant, grace-filled faith. They're watching:

- How you handle suffering
- How you treat others
- How you deal with your own failures
- Whether you practice what you preach
- Whether your faith makes you more loving or more judgmental

Model what you hope they'll embrace.

When They Walk Away from Faith

Some teenagers/young adults will make a clear decision to walk away from faith. This is devastating for Christian parents.

What to do:

1. Grieve appropriately

This is a loss. It's okay to grieve. Process your grief with other adults (spouse, friends, counselor, pastor)—not with your child.

2. Don't panic or catastrophize

Many young adults who walk away from faith in their late teens/early twenties return later. This may be a season, not a permanent departure.

3. Don't use manipulation, guilt, or control

"I guess I failed as a parent." "You're breaking my heart." "How can you do this to us?" "You'll go to hell."

These responses push them further away and make their faith journey about you rather than about God.

4. Keep relationship open

"I'm sad about your decision because faith is so important to me. But I love you regardless. Our relationship isn't conditional on you believing what I believe."

5. Continue to live your faith authentically

Don't hide your faith or stop practicing it to make them comfortable. Continue to pray (privately), attend church, live out your beliefs. You're modeling that faith can be held without forcing it on others.

6. Trust God's long-term work

"The effective prayer of a righteous man can accomplish much" (James 5:16, NASB).

God is pursuing your child. He's not finished. Your job is to love them, stay in relationship, live your faith authentically, and trust God to draw them.

The Co-Dependent Spiritual Trap

Co-dependent parents make their child's faith about themselves:

- Their worth is tied to their child's spiritual state

- They feel like failures if their child doubts or leaves
- They use control, manipulation, or guilt to maintain religious compliance
- They can't have peace if their child isn't walking with God
- They make the child responsible for the parent's spiritual/emotional wellbeing

But your child's relationship with God is between them and God. You can influence, teach, model, pray—but you cannot control or take ownership of their faith journey.

Surrender them to God. Trust His pursuit of them. Stay in loving relationship regardless of where they are spiritually.

The Launch Conversation: Expectations After 18

One of the most important conversations you can have with your 16-17 year old is the "launch conversation"—discussing clearly what life will look like after high school graduation and age 18.

Many families never have this conversation explicitly, leading to confusion, conflict, and prolonged dependence. Don't make this mistake.

Topics to Address in the Launch Conversation

1. Post-high school plans

"What do you want to do after graduation? College? Trade school? Military? Gap year? Work? Let's talk about what each option would look like and what we'll support."

Be clear about what you will and won't contribute to financially.

2. Living arrangements

Will they:

- Go away to college?

- Live at home and attend local college?
- Live at home and work?
- Move out independently?

If living at home after 18, what are the expectations? (More on this below.)

3. Financial expectations

"Here's what we'll help with financially and for how long." "Here's what you'll be responsible for." "Here's our timeline for financial independence."

Be specific. Put it in writing if helpful.

4. Relationship expectations

"When you're 18 and independent, our relationship will shift. You'll be an adult. We'll treat you as one. That means:

- We won't manage your schedule or decisions
- We won't have authority over your choices
- We'll offer advice when asked, but won't require compliance
- You'll be responsible for your own life
- We'll relate as adults, not parent-child"

5. Family values and boundaries

"These are the values that matter to us in our home. If you're living here, we expect [specific expectations]. If you live independently, you're free to make your own choices, even if we disagree with them."

6. Communication expectations

"We'd love to hear from you regularly, but we won't demand it. What seems reasonable to you for staying in touch?"

7. Support we'll offer

"We'll always be here for advice, emotional support, and [specific ways you'll help]. But we won't rescue you from adult consequences or make your problems our problems."

If They'll Be Living at Home After 18

Many young adults live at home for a period after 18 (attending local college, saving money, starting a career). This can be healthy—if expectations are clear.

Create a written "adult child living at home" agreement addressing:

Financial contribution:

- Rent amount or equivalent contribution (housework, groceries, etc.)
- Their expenses they're responsible for
- Your expenses you'll still cover (if any)

Household expectations:

- Their responsibilities (cooking, cleaning, yard work)
- Shared space vs. private space
- Noise and schedule considerations
- Guest policies

Communication and respect:

- How you'll communicate about schedules and plans
- Mutual respect expectations
- How disagreements will be handled

Timeline:

- How long is this arrangement expected to last?
- What's the plan for moving toward full independence?

- What triggers a change (graduation, specific income level, certain age)?

The principle: They're an adult living in your home, not a child you're still raising. The dynamic is different.

The Graduated Launch

Launch doesn't happen in one day. It's a gradual process:

Age 18: Legal adulthood, but often still partially dependent (especially if in college)

Ages 18-22 (college years): Growing independence with some support

Ages 22-25 (early career): Near-full or full financial independence, complete life management independence

The goal: By mid-twenties at the latest, they're fully functioning independent adults who come to you for advice and connection, not for management or financial support.

When They're Not Ready to Launch

Some 18-year-olds aren't ready. They:

- Haven't developed necessary life skills
- Lack maturity or responsibility
- Struggle with mental health issues
- Have special needs requiring support

If this is your situation:

1. Get professional help if needed

Therapy, life skills coaching, vocational rehabilitation—whatever they need.

2. Create a plan with milestones

What specific skills/behaviors need to develop before launch? What's the timeline? What support will you provide?

3. Don't enable

Even with delayed launch, continue increasing responsibility and decreasing your management.

4. Distinguish between can't and won't

Can't = genuine disability, mental health crisis, legitimate barriers Won't = capable but refusing to launch

If they're capable but refusing, you may need to require movement:

"You're capable of working and contributing. If you're living here, you'll [work/attend school/contribute significantly to household]. If you choose not to, you'll need to find another place to live."

This feels cruel but is actually loving—it refuses to enable continued dependence.

Co-Dependent Traps to Avoid: The Launch Years

These are the most critical co-dependent traps because they can extend dysfunction into your child's adulthood:

Trap #1: Keeping Them Financially Dependent to Maintain Control

What it looks like:

- Paying for everything so you can maintain authority
- Using money to influence their decisions
- Creating dependency so they can't leave
- Paying for a lifestyle they can't afford themselves
- Making them feel guilty about financial independence

Why it's co-dependent: You need them to need you. Financial dependence keeps them under your control and maintains your role as essential.

What to do instead:

- Prepare them for financial independence systematically
- Be clear about what you will/won't fund and for how long
- Celebrate their financial independence
- Let them make financial mistakes and learn
- Don't use money to manipulate

Trap #2: Making College Choices About Your Desires

What it looks like:

- Requiring them to attend your alma mater
- Pushing them toward careers that matter to you
- Not allowing them to choose their path
- Using financial control to dictate choices
- Living vicariously through their educational journey

Why it's co-dependent: You're making their life about your dreams, your preferences, your needs—not about who they are and what God's calling them to.

What to do instead:

- Help them discover their interests and strengths
- Support their choices even if different from yours
- Offer input without controlling decisions
- Remember their life is theirs to live

Trap #3: Guilting Them About Leaving

What it looks like:

- "I'm going to be so lonely when you leave"
- "I don't know what I'll do without you"

- "You're abandoning us"
- Making their launch about your loss
- Using guilt to keep them close or keep them dependent

Why it's co-dependent: You're making them responsible for your emotional wellbeing. You're preventing healthy separation because you can't handle your own feelings.

What to do instead:

- Process your grief with other adults
- Celebrate their launch
- Have your own life and interests
- Express: "I'll miss you, but I'm so excited for this next chapter for you"

Trap #4: Continuing to Rescue from Adult Consequences

What it looks like:

- Bailing them out of financial trouble in their twenties
- Calling their employers to complain or intervene
- Solving their adult problems
- Making their consequences your problems
- Not letting them experience the full weight of their choices

Why it's co-dependent: You can't tolerate their discomfort, you need to be needed, and you're preventing them from developing adult capability.

What to do instead:

- Let adult consequences stand
- Offer emotional support, not material rescue
- Trust they can handle hard things

- Remember: rescuing prevents growth

Trap #5: Making Them Responsible for Your Emotional Well-Being

What it looks like:

- Requiring they call/visit to keep you happy
- Making them feel guilty for having their own life
- Using emotional manipulation ("You never call!" "I guess I'm not important to you anymore")
- Needing them to meet your emotional needs
- Can't function well without regular contact

Why it's co-dependent: You've made them responsible for your emotional state. This is the opposite of launch—it keeps them emotionally tethered and unable to fully separate.

What to do instead:

- Have your own support system
- Manage your own emotions
- Express: "I'd love to hear from you when you have time" not "You never call me!"
- Celebrate when they're busy living their life

Trap #6: Preventing Them from Experiencing Romantic Heartbreak

What it looks like:

- Trying to control their romantic relationships
- Being overly involved in their dating life
- Not allowing them to experience relationship pain
- Making their relationships about you

Why it's co-dependent: You can't tolerate their pain, you're too enmeshed with their life, or you're using relationships to stay involved.

What to do instead:

- Let them navigate relationships
- Be available but not intrusive
- Allow heartbreak to teach them
- Trust they'll learn from relationship experiences

Practical Launch Preparation: A Senior Year Checklist

Here's a comprehensive checklist of skills and experiences your teenager should have before graduating high school:

Life Skills

☐ Can do laundry (wash, dry, fold, treat stains) ☐ Can cook at least 10 basic meals ☐ Can grocery shop with a list and budget ☐ Knows how to clean a bathroom, kitchen, bedroom ☐ Can do basic household maintenance (change light bulbs, unclog drains, etc.) ☐ Knows how to navigate public transportation or drive safely ☐ Can make appointments (medical, etc.) and keep them ☐ Understands basic first aid ☐ Can read and follow a recipe ☐ Knows how to pack efficiently

Financial Skills

☐ Has a checking and savings account and knows how to manage them ☐ Understands how to budget income and expenses ☐ Has worked a job and understands paychecks ☐ Knows how credit works ☐ Understands student loans if taking them ☐ Can pay bills online ☐ Knows what adult living costs ☐ Has practiced saving for a goal

Social/Emotional Skills

☐ Can resolve conflicts constructively ☐ Knows how to make and maintain friendships ☐ Can set and maintain boundaries ☐ Can advocate for

themselves with adults ☐ Knows how to access mental health support if needed ☐ Can handle disappointment and failure ☐ Has some experience recovering from mistakes

Academic/Professional Skills

☐ Can manage time and meet deadlines independently ☐ Has some professional experience (job, volunteer, internship) ☐ Knows how to write professional emails ☐ Can research and solve problems independently ☐ Understands their learning style and how to seek help when needed

Decision-Making Skills

☐ Has practiced making significant decisions (classes, activities, job, college) ☐ Can weigh options and consider consequences ☐ Has experienced both good and poor decisions and learned from both ☐ Can ask for advice without requiring someone else to decide

Spiritual/Moral Foundation

☐ Has articulated their own values and beliefs ☐ Understands your family values and why they matter ☐ Has wrestled with faith questions and come to some conclusions ☐ Knows how to find Christian community ☐ Has some practice making moral decisions independently

If there are significant gaps in this checklist, spend the remaining time before graduation systematically teaching and releasing these skills.

The Blessing: Releasing Them Well

In biblical times, parents blessed their children—formally recognizing and celebrating their transition to adulthood. Consider doing something similar.

A Launch Blessing Ceremony

Some families create a meaningful ceremony around high school graduation or 18th birthday to formally recognize the transition. This might include:

1. Acknowledging who they've become

Share specific ways you've seen them mature, specific strengths you admire, specific character you've observed.

2. Releasing them to their calling

"We release you to follow where God leads you. We trust Him with your journey. We believe in the person you're becoming."

3. Offering blessing

Pray over them, citing Scripture, asking for God's guidance and blessing on their next chapter.

4. Stating your ongoing commitment

"We'll always be your parents. Our role is changing, but our love isn't. We're here when you need us, cheering you on."

5. Giving a meaningful gift

Something that represents this transition—a Bible with notes you've written, a piece of jewelry, a letter reviewing their journey, a symbolic item.

This formal recognition helps both parent and child mark the transition.

The Hope: What Successful Launch Creates

When you parent well through the teenage years—increasing freedom, allowing mistakes, teaching responsibility, releasing control, celebrating independence—here's what you create:

A young adult who:

- Knows they're capable
- Trusts themselves to make decisions
- Can handle life's challenges
- Isn't afraid to fail because they know they can recover
- Takes responsibility for their own life

- Manages finances wisely
- Forms healthy relationships
- Knows their worth in Christ, not in achievement or others' opinions
- Can set and maintain boundaries
- Relates to you as an adult, not a dependent child

A parent-adult child relationship characterized by:

- Mutual respect
- Connection by choice, not obligation
- Honest communication
- Celebration of their independence
- Your pride in who they've become
- Their gratitude for how you prepared them
- Regular contact because they want to, not because they have to
- Ability to discuss difficult topics without defensiveness
- Them coming to you for wisdom, not management
- Enjoyment of each other as adults

This is the goal. This is what you've been working toward since they were toddlers. The teenager who leaves well becomes the adult who returns by choice, not obligation.

They come back—for holidays, for visits, for phone calls, for advice—because they want to, because the relationship is life-giving, because you released them well and they're choosing to stay connected.

This is freedom. This is health. This is the fruit of parenting from freedom rather than from co-dependency.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- Freedom and responsibility must increase together; the high school years are about systematically transferring adult responsibilities
- Mistakes made at 16-18 with your safety net are far better than mistakes made at 22 without support; let them fail safely
- Financial independence is essential; teach money management and release financial control before launch
- Their romantic relationships and faith journey are theirs to navigate; you can guide but can't control
- The launch conversation (age 16-17) creates clarity about expectations for post-18 life
- Co-dependent traps include financial control, making their choices about your needs, guilt about leaving, continued rescue, and preventing necessary experiences

Remember: Your job during these years is to deliberately, intentionally, systematically work yourself out of a job. The goal isn't a child who always needs you—it's an adult who chooses relationship with you because it's healthy and life-giving.

Action Steps This Week:

1. If your teen is 16+, schedule the launch conversation to discuss post-18 expectations
2. Identify one area where you're still over-functioning and create a plan to release it
3. Review the senior year checklist—what gaps need to be addressed before graduation?

4. Evaluate your financial boundaries—are you maintaining dependence or teaching independence?
 5. Consider planning a blessing ceremony for their transition to adulthood
-

Reflection Questions:

1. How do you feel about your teenager becoming fully independent? What fears come up? What excites you?
 2. In what areas are you still over-functioning or rescuing? What makes it hard to stop?
 3. How are you doing with the balance between freedom and responsibility? Too much of either?
 4. Are you keeping your child financially dependent in any way to maintain control? What needs to change?
 5. How is your teenager's spiritual journey triggering your own anxiety or control? What do you need to surrender?
 6. What does your ideal parent-adult child relationship look like? Are your current patterns moving toward or away from that vision?
-

Prayer for Parents of Teens/Young Adults:

Father, these final years at home are so precious and so hard. Help me release control while maintaining connection. Give me wisdom to know when to step in and when to step back. Help me let them fail safely, make mistakes with my safety net still there, and learn the lessons that will serve them for a lifetime. Give me courage to stop rescuing, to let them experience consequences, to trust they can handle hard things. Help me prepare them financially, practically, emotionally, and spiritually for adult life. Show me where I'm holding on too tightly—whether with money, control, or emotional dependence—and give me strength to release. Help me celebrate their

growing independence rather than mourning their separation. Prepare my heart for launch. Let me release them with blessing, not guilt. Help them know they're loved for who they are, not for staying close or meeting my needs. And Father, help me trust You with their journey—with their choices, their faith, their relationships, their futures. You love them more than I do. You're going with them. That's enough. Teach me to parent these final years from freedom, releasing them into the abundant life You have for them. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"Let no one look down on your youthfulness, but rather in speech, conduct, love, faith and purity, show yourself an example of those who believe."

—1 Timothy 4:12 (NASB)

"Choose for yourselves today whom you will serve... but as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord."

—Joshua 24:15 (NASB)

PART THREE: SPECIFIC CHALLENGES

Common Co-Dependent Patterns and How to Break Them

CHAPTER 8

Emotional Boundaries: Their Feelings Are Not Your Responsibility

"Bear one another's burdens, and thereby fulfill the law of Christ... For each one will bear his own load."

—Galatians 6:2, 5 (NASB)

Michelle sat on her therapist's couch, exhausted. "I don't understand," she said. "My daughter Emma is having a hard time at school. She's anxious about her classes, stressed about friendships, worried about college applications. And I... I can't function. I can't sleep. I can't concentrate at work. I'm constantly thinking about her problems, trying to figure out how to fix them. My husband says I'm obsessed, but she's my daughter. How can I not be upset when she's upset?"

Her therapist leaned forward. "Michelle, can you tell me: where do your feelings end and Emma's begin?"

Michelle stared blankly. "What do you mean?"

"When Emma is anxious, who's anxious—Emma or you or both?"

"Both, I guess?"

"And when Emma's stressed, who's stressed?"

"We both are."

"And when Emma has a problem, whose problem is it?"

Michelle paused. Then quietly: "I guess... I make it mine."

"Yes. You've absorbed Emma's emotional life into your own. You're carrying emotions that belong to her. And the problem is: when you're carrying her

emotions, you can't help her learn to carry her own. You're both drowning when only one person is in the water."

This conversation captures one of the most insidious and damaging patterns in co-dependent parenting: **emotional enmeshment**—the inability to maintain emotional boundaries between yourself and your children.

When you lack emotional boundaries, your child's feelings become your feelings. Their problems become your problems. Their emotional state controls your emotional state. You can't be okay unless they're okay. You absorb their emotions rather than simply witnessing and supporting them.

This pattern, while it feels like love and deep care, is actually harmful to both of you. It prevents your children from learning emotional regulation (because you're doing it for them), creates anxiety in them (because they learn they're responsible for your emotions), and leaves you emotionally exhausted and unable to parent effectively.

This chapter will help you understand the difference between healthy empathy and unhealthy emotional absorption, teach you how to establish appropriate emotional boundaries with your children, and give you practical tools for supporting their emotions without taking ownership of them.

Distinguishing Between Empathy and Absorption

Let's start with a crucial distinction that many co-dependent parents have never been taught: **There's a profound difference between feeling with someone (empathy) and becoming someone (absorption).**

Empathy (Healthy)

Empathy is the ability to understand and share the feelings of another while maintaining your own separate emotional center.

With empathy, you:

- Recognize what your child is feeling
- Understand why they feel that way

- Feel compassion for their struggle
- Remain emotionally regulated yourself
- Can be present to their pain without drowning in it
- Maintain the distinction between their emotions and yours

Empathy says: "I see that you're hurting. I understand why this is hard for you. I'm here with you in this pain. And I'm steady enough to help you through it."

When you have empathy, you're like a lifeguard. You see someone struggling in the water. You understand their panic and fear. You feel compassion. But you don't jump in and start drowning with them. Instead, you remain on solid ground, throw them a lifeline, and guide them to safety—all while staying regulated and capable yourself.

Absorption (Co-dependent)

Absorption is when you lose the boundary between your emotions and your child's emotions. You don't just understand their feelings—you take them on as if they're your own.

With absorption, you:

- Feel what your child feels at the same intensity
- Cannot be okay if they're not okay
- Take ownership of their emotional state
- Become dysregulated when they're dysregulated
- Need them to feel better so you can feel better
- Lose the distinction between their emotions and yours

Absorption says: "If you're hurting, I'm hurting. Your pain is my pain. I can't be okay until you're okay. Your emotional state controls mine."

When you absorb emotions, you're like a lifeguard who sees someone drowning and jumps in without a life preserver. Now two people are drowning.

You can't help them because you're panicking too. In fact, they may now try to save you instead of focusing on saving themselves.

Why This Distinction Matters

Your children need your empathy. They don't need you to absorb their emotions.

When you empathize:

- They learn their emotions are manageable (because you're managing yours)
- They develop emotional regulation (by watching you stay regulated)
- They feel supported without feeling responsible for you
- They learn emotions are temporary and survivable
- They develop confidence in their ability to handle difficult feelings

When you absorb:

- They learn emotions are overwhelming (because yours are)
- They don't develop emotional regulation (because you're doing it for them—or failing to)
- They feel responsible for your emotional state
- They learn emotions are dangerous and must be fixed immediately
- They become anxious about their own feelings because they see how they affect you

Henri Nouwen wrote: "When we honestly ask ourselves which person in our lives means the most to us, we often find that it is those who, instead of giving advice, solutions, or cures, have chosen rather to share our pain and touch our wounds with a warm and tender hand."

Your children need you to share their pain (empathy), not become their pain (absorption). They need you to touch their wounds with a steady hand, not a trembling one.

Self-Assessment: Empathy or Absorption?

Answer honestly:

Empathy indicators:

- ☐ When my child is upset, I feel compassion but remain emotionally steady
- ☐ I can comfort my child while staying regulated myself
- ☐ I can be present to my child's pain without needing to fix it immediately
- ☐ My mood doesn't depend on my child's mood
- ☐ I can validate my child's feelings while maintaining my own separate emotions
- ☐ I sleep well even when my child is struggling
- ☐ I can enjoy my day even when I know my child is having a hard time
- ☐ I can let my child work through emotions without becoming anxious

Absorption indicators:

- ☐ When my child is upset, I become upset at the same intensity
- ☐ My child's bad mood ruins my entire day
- ☐ I can't stop thinking about my child's problems
- ☐ I can't enjoy anything when I know my child is struggling
- ☐ My emotional state mirrors my child's emotional state
- ☐ I lose sleep worrying about my child's feelings
- ☐ I feel responsible for making my child feel better

- ☐ I need my child to be happy so I can be happy

If you checked more absorption indicators than empathy indicators, you're likely emotionally enmeshed with your child. This chapter will help you establish healthier boundaries.

You Can Care Without Carrying—Even With Your Children

Here's a truth that challenges everything co-dependent parents believe: **You can deeply care about your children's emotions without carrying the weight of those emotions yourself.**

This seems contradictory. We've been taught that caring means feeling what they feel, that love means taking on their burdens, that good parenting means being completely invested in their emotional state.

But Scripture actually makes a clear distinction between "bearing one another's burdens" (Galatians 6:2) and "each one will bear his own load" (Galatians 6:5).

Understanding Galatians 6:2 vs. 6:5

These verses, only three verses apart, seem contradictory until you understand what they're actually saying:

Galatians 6:2 - "Bear one another's burdens" (βάρη/bare)

- The Greek word *bare* refers to heavy, crushing weights that are too much for one person
- These are extraordinary burdens: grief, trauma, crisis, tragedy
- We're called to help carry these overwhelming weights alongside the person experiencing them
- This is mutual support in times of crisis

Galatians 6:5 - "Each one will bear his own load" (φορτίον/phortion)

- The Greek word *phortion* refers to the everyday pack a soldier carries

- These are normal, daily responsibilities and emotions
- Each person is responsible for managing their own regular life load
- We shouldn't carry what others can carry themselves

Applied to parenting:

Burdens to bear together (Galatians 6:2):

- A child experiencing trauma
- A teenager in mental health crisis
- A child facing serious illness or loss
- Extraordinary emotional pain that's too much to carry alone

In these situations: You come alongside, offer support, get professional help, walk with them through the crisis. You bear the burden together.

Loads they carry themselves (Galatians 6:5):

- Normal childhood disappointments
- Everyday frustrations
- Social conflicts
- Academic stress
- Normal developmental emotions
- Regular life challenges

In these situations: You validate, coach, and support—but they carry their own emotional load. You don't absorb it.

What Caring Without Carrying Looks Like

Carrying (co-dependent): Child: "I'm so stressed about my test tomorrow!"

Parent: *Becomes equally stressed, can't sleep, worries all night, texts child repeatedly, takes on the anxiety as their own, can't function until test is over*

Caring without carrying (healthy): Child: "I'm so stressed about my test tomorrow!" Parent: "That sounds really stressful. Tests can feel overwhelming. What have you done to prepare? Is there anything you need?" *Remains calm, offers support, maintains own emotional regulation, sleeps fine, trusts child to handle their own test*

See the difference?

In the first scenario, now two people are stressed about the test—and only one of them is taking it. The parent's stress doesn't help the child; it actually adds to the burden because now the child worries about their parent worrying about them.

In the second scenario, the parent cares deeply but doesn't carry the stress. They're steady, available, supportive—but not drowning. This models for the child: "Stress is manageable. You can handle this. I believe in you."

The Paradox: Caring More by Carrying Less

Here's what sounds backwards but is actually true: **When you stop carrying your children's emotions, you can actually care for them better.**

Why? Because:

- 1. You can think clearly** When you're not emotionally overwhelmed, you can offer wisdom, perspective, and guidance.
- 2. You model emotional regulation** Your calm shows them that emotions can be managed, that they're not emergencies.
- 3. You're not adding your anxiety to their situation** They only have to manage their emotions, not yours.
- 4. You empower them** By not rescuing them emotionally, you communicate: "You're capable of handling this."
- 5. You maintain your own wellbeing** You can't pour from an empty cup. When you're not emotionally depleted by carrying their emotions, you have more to offer.

Paul David Tripp writes: "You cannot be what you were designed to be—a tool of change—while being focused on yourself." When you're drowning in your child's emotions (absorption), you're actually focused on managing your own discomfort with their feelings. When you can care without carrying, you're truly focused on them—supporting their growth rather than managing your anxiety.

Teaching Emotional Vocabulary and Self-Regulation

One of the most important gifts you can give your children is emotional literacy—the ability to name, understand, and manage their emotions. This is impossible to teach if you're emotionally enmeshed with them.

Why Emotional Literacy Matters

Children who develop emotional literacy:

- Can identify what they're feeling
- Understand that emotions are information, not emergencies
- Can communicate their needs clearly
- Develop healthy coping strategies
- Form healthier relationships
- Are less likely to develop anxiety or depression
- Don't need others to regulate their emotions

Children who lack emotional literacy:

- Feel overwhelmed by unnamed emotions
- Act out feelings rather than expressing them
- Can't ask for what they need
- Look to others to fix their feelings
- Struggle with emotional regulation throughout life

- Are more vulnerable to co-dependent relationships

Building Emotional Vocabulary

Start young and continue throughout childhood. Here's how:

With Toddlers/Preschoolers (Ages 1-5):

Name emotions simply:

- "You look happy!"
- "I see you're frustrated."
- "That face tells me you're angry."
- "You seem sad right now."

Connect emotions to situations:

- "You're disappointed because we can't go to the park."
- "You're excited about your birthday!"
- "You're frustrated because the puzzle is tricky."

Validate without fixing:

- "It's okay to be angry. Everyone feels angry sometimes."
- "Sadness is a real feeling. Sometimes we feel sad."
- "You're allowed to be frustrated."

Model your own emotions:

- "Mommy is feeling frustrated right now. I'm going to take some deep breaths."
- "I'm feeling happy because we get to spend time together!"

With Elementary Age (Ages 6-11):

Expand vocabulary: Move beyond basic emotions (happy, sad, mad) to more nuanced ones:

- Disappointed, embarrassed, anxious, excited, proud, jealous, nervous, confused, worried, lonely, content, frustrated, overwhelmed

Help them locate emotions in their body:

- "Where do you feel that anxiety? In your stomach? Your chest?"
- "When you're angry, what happens in your body? Do your muscles get tight?"

Discuss intensity:

- "On a scale of 1-10, how angry are you?"
- "Is this a little bit sad or a lot sad?"

Connect thoughts and feelings:

- "What were you thinking right before you felt angry?"
- "When you think about the test, what emotion comes up?"

With Tweens/Teens (Ages 12+):

Acknowledge complexity:

- "Sometimes we feel multiple emotions at once. You can be excited and nervous about something."
- "Emotions can be contradictory. You can love someone and be angry at them."

Discuss emotional patterns:

- "I notice you get really anxious on Sunday nights. What's that about?"
- "You seem to shut down when you're hurt. Is that accurate?"

Normalize difficult emotions:

- "Depression is a real thing. If you're feeling consistently down, let's talk about it."

- "Anxiety is really common in teenagers. You're not alone in feeling this way."

Teach emotional discernment:

- "Not all feelings need to be acted on. You can feel angry and choose not to act on it."
- "Feelings are information, not commands."

Teaching Self-Regulation

Emotional regulation is the ability to manage your emotional responses. You can't teach this if you don't have it yourself. (Which is why your own therapy and growth work is so important.)

Age-appropriate self-regulation strategies:

Toddlers/Preschoolers:

- Deep breathing (blow out birthday candles, smell flowers)
- Counting to 10
- Using a calm-down corner
- Physical movement (jumping, running)
- Comfort items (stuffed animal, blanket)
- Naming the emotion

Elementary Age:

- Deeper breathing techniques
- Taking a break when overwhelmed
- Physical exercise
- Creative outlets (art, music, writing)
- Talking to a trusted adult

- Problem-solving strategies
- Progressive muscle relaxation

Tweens/Teens:

- Cognitive reframing
- Mindfulness practices
- Journaling
- Exercise
- Creative expression
- Talking to friends or trusted adults
- Understanding triggers
- Developing personal coping toolkit
- Recognizing when to seek professional help

How to Teach Without Absorbing

What it looks like to teach while maintaining boundaries:

Scenario: Your 8-year-old comes home crying because a friend excluded them at recess.

Absorption (unhealthy): Parent becomes upset, feels the hurt deeply, is angry at the other child, wants to call the other parent, can't let it go all evening, loses sleep thinking about it, brings it up repeatedly.

Empathy + Teaching (healthy): Parent: "Oh honey, that sounds really painful. Being left out hurts. Come sit with me and tell me what happened."

Child explains

Parent: "I can see why you're hurt. Let's name what you're feeling. Is it sad? Angry? Disappointed? Maybe all three?"

Child identifies feelings

Parent: "Those are all normal feelings when someone excludes us. Your feelings are okay. Now, let's think about what you can do with these feelings. Do you need to cry for a bit? Do you want to draw or write about it? Do you want to talk more? Or do you need some space?"

Child chooses

Parent: "Okay. I'm here if you need me. When you're ready, we can talk about what you might want to do tomorrow—talk to your friend, play with someone else, tell a teacher. But for right now, it's okay to just feel sad."

Parent continues with their evening, checking in periodically but not taking on the hurt

Notice what the parent did:

- Validated the emotion
- Helped the child name the feeling
- Taught coping strategies
- Empowered the child to choose
- Remained emotionally steady
- Didn't absorb the pain
- Trusted the child to work through it

Teaching Emotional Responsibility

Part of emotional literacy is understanding: "I am responsible for my own emotions. Others are responsible for theirs."

Teach this by:

1. Not taking ownership of their emotions

- "You're feeling angry. That's your feeling to work through."
- NOT: "You're making me so upset with your anger!"

2. Not making them responsible for your emotions

- "I'm feeling frustrated. That's my feeling to manage."
- NOT: "You're making me frustrated! You need to stop upsetting me!"

3. Teaching them to communicate needs without blame

- "When you yelled at me, I felt hurt" (owns the feeling)
- NOT: "You hurt my feelings!" (makes it the other person's responsibility)

4. Modeling emotional ownership

- "I'm having a hard day, so I might be a little grumpy. That's about me, not about you."

5. Refusing to fix all their emotions

- "I see you're upset. What do you think would help?"
- NOT: "Let me make you feel better! What can I do to fix this?"

Dietrich Bonhoeffer wrote: "Let him who cannot be alone beware of community... Let him who is not in community beware of being alone." Applied to emotional life: Those who cannot handle their own emotions shouldn't try to manage others'. Those who absorb others' emotions should examine their inability to be alone with their own emotional experience.

Not Making Your Children Your Therapists or Confidants

This is one of the most damaging forms of emotional boundary violation: **using your children to meet emotional needs that should be met by adults.**

This pattern is called emotional incest or covert incest—not because anything sexual is happening, but because the parent-child roles are reversed in a way that's harmful to the child.

What It Looks Like

You're using your child as a therapist/confidant if you:

- Share adult problems with them (marital issues, financial stress, work problems)
- Confide in them about your own childhood trauma
- Process your emotional struggles with them
- Look to them for comfort when you're upset
- Share inappropriate details about your life
- Make them your primary source of emotional support
- Tell them things that burden them with worry about you
- Treat them as a peer rather than a child
- Say things like "You're my best friend" or "I don't know what I'd do without you"

Why It's Harmful

When you make your child your confidant:

The child learns:

- They're responsible for your emotional wellbeing
- Their job is to take care of you
- They can't have their own needs because yours are primary
- They must be mature beyond their years
- Their childhood is less important than your needs
- They can't be a child—they must be your support system

The child develops:

- Anxiety (from carrying adult burdens)
- Difficulty with their own identity (they're too busy managing yours)
- Caretaking patterns in all relationships

- Inability to set boundaries
- Resentment (conscious or unconscious)
- Adult co-dependency patterns

Long-term effects:

- They become adults who over-function in all relationships
- They attract people who need taking care of
- They struggle to have their own needs
- They feel guilty about having feelings, needs, or problems
- They repeat co-dependent patterns in their own parenting

The Line Between Appropriate Sharing and Burdening

There IS appropriate sharing with your children. The key is: **sharing should be age-appropriate, emotionally appropriate, and not seek emotional support from the child.**

Appropriate sharing:

- "I'm having a hard day at work. I might be a little stressed tonight, but that's not your fault and I'm handling it."
- "Grandma is sick and I'm worried about her. I wanted you to know because we might visit the hospital this week."
- "Dad and I disagree about this parenting decision. We're working it out. You don't need to worry."
- "I'm feeling sad today because I'm missing Grandpa. It's okay to miss people we love."

Inappropriate sharing:

- "Your father and I are having problems. I don't know if we're going to make it."

- "Work has been so stressful. I cry every day. I don't know what I'm going to do."
- "My childhood was terrible. Let me tell you what my mother did to me..."
- "You're the only one who understands me. I don't know what I'd do without you."
- "I'm so lonely. You're my best friend."

The guideline:

Ask yourself:

1. **Is this age-appropriate?** Would I tell this to all children this age?
2. **Am I sharing to inform, or am I seeking comfort/support?**
3. **Will this burden them with worry or responsibility?**
4. **Can they do anything about this, or am I just dumping on them?**
5. **Am I treating them like a peer when they're actually a child?**

If you're seeking emotional support from your child—STOP. Call a friend, your spouse, your therapist. Don't use your child.

What To Do Instead

When you need emotional support:

- Call a friend
- Talk to your spouse
- See your therapist
- Journal
- Pray
- Join a support group
- Talk to a pastor or mentor

Your children can know you have emotions, but they shouldn't be the ones managing them.

Example: You had a terrible day at work. You're upset.

What NOT to do: Come home and vent to your child about everything that went wrong, how unfair it is, how stressed you are, seeking their comfort and reassurance.

What TO do: Come home and say: "I had a tough day at work. I'm going to take a few minutes to decompress, and then I'll be fully present for our evening together. This isn't about you—just something I need to process."

Then: Call a friend, journal, pray, or talk to your spouse later. Process your emotions with adults.

Repairing If You've Done This

If you realize you've been using your child as a confidant, you can repair:

For younger children (under 10): "I realize I've been sharing adult problems with you. That wasn't fair. Those are grownup things I should talk about with other grownups, not with you. Your job is to be a kid, not to worry about adult problems. I'm sorry."

For older children/teens: "I need to talk to you about something. I realize I've been leaning on you emotionally in ways that weren't appropriate. I've shared things that were too much for you to carry. I've made you feel responsible for my feelings. That was wrong. You deserve to be the child in this relationship, not my therapist. I'm going to work on getting my emotional needs met by other adults. I'm sorry for putting that on you."

They may be relieved. They may be confused. They may be angry. All reactions are valid. Give them space to respond.

How to Support Without Fixing Their Emotions

One of the hardest skills for co-dependent parents to learn is: **How do I be present to my child's pain without trying to make it stop?**

Your instinct is to fix. To make them feel better. To solve the problem. To do whatever it takes to stop their pain.

But pain is not always a problem to be solved. Sometimes it's an experience to be had, a teacher, a necessary part of growth.

Why Fixing Their Emotions Is Harmful

When you always fix their emotions, they learn:

- "My emotions are too much for me to handle"
- "I need someone else to make me feel better"
- "Negative emotions are emergencies that must be stopped"
- "I'm not capable of managing my own feelings"
- "I need others to regulate me"

This creates emotional dependence—exactly the co-dependent pattern you're trying to break.

What Supporting Without Fixing Looks Like

Supporting means:

- Being present
- Listening without judgment
- Validating their emotions
- Staying calm while they're not
- Offering tools/strategies if they want them
- Trusting they can handle their feelings
- Allowing emotions to exist without rushing to change them

Fixing means:

- Trying to make the feeling go away

- Solving the problem immediately
- Distracting them from the emotion
- Making promises to prevent future pain
- Taking action to change their situation
- Doing things so they won't be sad/mad/disappointed

The Support Script

When your child is upset, use this framework:

- 1. Notice and name** "I see you're really upset."
- 2. Invite sharing** "Want to tell me about it?"
- 3. Listen fully** (Don't interrupt, don't immediately problem-solve, just listen)
- 4. Validate** "That makes sense. I understand why you'd feel that way."
- 5. Normalize** "It's really normal to feel [emotion] when [situation]."
- 6. Ask, don't tell** "What do you think would help right now?" "What do you need?" "Do you want my input, or do you just need to vent?"
- 7. Offer presence** "I'm here. I can sit with you, or give you space—whatever you need."
- 8. Express confidence** "This is hard. And I know you can get through it."
- 9. Let them sit with the emotion** Don't rush to make it better. Let them feel what they're feeling.

Age-Appropriate Supporting (Without Fixing)

Toddlers/Preschoolers: Child is having a tantrum because they can't have a cookie.

Fixing: "Okay, okay! Here's the cookie! Just stop crying!"

Supporting: "You're really angry that you can't have a cookie. You're allowed to be angry. I'm going to sit here while you're upset. When you're calm, we can

talk." (Sit nearby calmly. Don't engage with the tantrum. Wait for them to regulate.)

Elementary Age: Child didn't make the soccer team.

Fixing: "That's so unfair! Let me call the coach! Maybe there's another team! We'll get private lessons and you'll make it next year! Let's go get ice cream to cheer you up!"

Supporting: "Oh buddy, I know you're disappointed. You worked hard and you really wanted to make the team. It's okay to be sad about this. What would help you right now? Do you want to talk about it, or have some space? I'm here either way."

Tweens/Teens: Teen is heartbroken about being excluded from a social group.

Fixing: "Those girls are mean anyway! You're better off without them! Let me call the school! Let's plan something even better so you won't feel left out!"

Supporting: "That really hurts. Being excluded is one of the hardest experiences. Tell me what happened... [listen] ...I can see why you're so hurt. What do you think you want to do? I'm here to talk through options if you want, or just to listen if that's what you need."

Notice: In each "supporting" example, the parent:

- Validated the emotion
- Stayed calm
- Didn't rush to fix
- Trusted the child to handle the feeling
- Offered presence without taking over

When Supporting Is Harder Than Fixing

Supporting is harder because:

1. You have to tolerate their discomfort This activates your own anxiety. You have to manage your feelings while they're managing theirs.

2. You don't get the immediate relief Fixing gives you the dopamine hit of "I made it better!" Supporting requires patience.

3. You can't control the outcome When you fix, you control. When you support, they control. That's scary.

4. You have to trust them Supporting requires believing they can handle their emotions. For co-dependent parents, this trust is difficult.

But supporting is better because:

- It builds their emotional muscle
- It communicates your confidence in them
- It teaches emotional resilience
- It prevents co-dependency
- It empowers them

Elisabeth Elliot wrote: "God's ultimate purpose is to make us like Christ, not to make us comfortable." Similarly, your ultimate purpose as a parent is to build their character and capability, not to eliminate all discomfort.

Emotional Coaching Scripts by Age

Let's get practical. Here are specific scripts for emotional coaching at different ages—showing how to maintain emotional boundaries while supporting your child.

Toddlers/Preschoolers (Ages 1-5)

Scenario: Tantrum over not getting what they want

✗ Absorption: *Parent becomes upset, frustrated, embarrassed (if in public), angry, feels overwhelmed* "Stop it! You're embarrassing me! Fine! Here, take it! Just stop crying!"

✅ **Bounded Support:** *Parent stays calm, acknowledges the emotion without absorbing it* "You're very angry right now. It's okay to be angry. You're safe. I'm going to sit here with you until you're calm." *Sits nearby calmly, doesn't engage with the tantrum* *When child calms:* "You were so angry. Are you feeling calmer now? Good. Let's talk about what happened."

Scenario: Sad about leaving the park

❌ **Fixing:** "Oh no, don't be sad! Look, we'll come back tomorrow! Want to stop for ice cream? Don't cry, sweetie!"

✅ **Bounded Support:** "You're sad because you were having fun and now we have to leave. It's hard to stop doing something fun. You can be sad about that. Let's think about what we're going to do when we get home—do you want to help me make dinner?"

Elementary Age (Ages 6-11)

Scenario: Failed a test

❌ **Absorption:** *Parent is devastated, worried about child's academic future, can't sleep, feels like they failed as a parent* "This is terrible! We need to get you a tutor immediately! Why didn't you study more? I'm so worried about your grades!"

✅ **Bounded Support:** "I see you got a low grade on this test. How are you feeling about it?" *Child expresses feeling (sad, embarrassed, worried)* "That makes sense. It doesn't feel good to not do well. Let's talk about what happened. Did you understand the material? Did you study? What do you think you need to do differently next time?" *Helps child problem-solve without taking ownership of the problem*

Scenario: Fight with best friend

❌ **Fixing:** "That's awful! What did she say? I'm going to call her mom! This is unacceptable! You deserve better friends! Let's plan something fun so you won't be sad!"

✅ **Bounded Support:** "Friend conflicts are really painful. Tell me what happened... [listens] ...I can see why you're hurt. What do you want to do about it? Do you want to talk to her? Give it some space? Think about whether this friendship is healthy for you? I'm here to help you think through your options."

Tweens (Ages 12-14)

Scenario: Anxiety about school performance

❌ **Absorption:** *Parent takes on the anxiety, can't function, obsesses over child's grades, constantly checks online portal, emails teachers "I'm so worried about you! Let me help you with everything! We need to make sure you're staying on top of this! I'll check your homework every night!"*

✅ **Bounded Support:** "I notice you seem really anxious about school. Want to talk about it?" *Teen shares anxiety* "That sounds stressful. School pressure is real. What do you think would help? Do you need better organizational strategies? Time management help? To talk to your teachers? Want to brainstorm together, or do you want to work on it yourself?" *Offers help without taking over*

Scenario: Social exclusion

❌ **Absorption + Fixing:** *Parent is angry at the other kids, wants to intervene, feels the hurt deeply, can't let it go* "Those kids are horrible! I never liked them anyway! Let's do something to show them you don't need them! This is so unfair!"

✅ **Bounded Support:** "Middle school social stuff is brutal. Being excluded really hurts. Tell me what's going on... [listens] ...That's really painful. Have you thought about what you want to do? Sometimes friendships shift in middle school. Sometimes it's worth trying to repair. Sometimes it's healthier to find new friends. What do you think?"

Teens (Ages 15-18)

Scenario: Romantic heartbreak

✗ Absorption: *Parent is devastated, feels the heartbreak intensely, wants to fix it, badmouths the ex* "I'm so sorry! That [ex] was terrible anyway! You're too good for them! Let me cheer you up! Want to go shopping? Let's plan a trip!"

✓ Bounded Support: "I'm really sorry. Heartbreak is awful. I'm here if you want to talk, or if you'd rather process it on your own, that's okay too." *If they want to talk, listen without judgment* "What you're feeling is normal. Heartbreak is one of the hardest things. It feels like it'll last forever, but I promise it won't. Take care of yourself—talk to friends, do things you enjoy, feel your feelings. I'm here."

Scenario: Stress about college applications

✗ Absorption: *Parent is equally stressed, obsesses over applications, can't sleep, makes it their project* "I'm so stressed about these applications! Let me help you with your essays! Did you submit that yet? Have you heard back? I'm checking the portal constantly!"

✓ Bounded Support: "College applications are stressful. How's it going?" *Teen shares stress* "That's a lot to manage. What's your timeline? Do you need any specific help from me, or are you handling it? I'm happy to proofread if you want, but this is your process. I trust you to manage it."

The Pattern

Notice the pattern in all the healthy examples:

1. Acknowledge the emotion
2. Validate it
3. Stay calm yourself
4. Trust them to handle it
5. Offer support (not takeover)
6. Maintain the boundary between their emotions and yours

Creating Appropriate Emotional Boundaries

Let's get practical about how to establish and maintain emotional boundaries with your children.

Step 1: Awareness

You can't change what you don't see. Start by noticing:

Keep an emotion journal for one week:

- When your child expresses an emotion, what happens in your body?
- Do you become anxious? Upset? Need to fix it?
- Does your mood shift to match theirs?
- Can you stay steady, or do you become dysregulated?
- What emotions of theirs are hardest for you to witness?

This awareness shows you where boundaries are weak.

Step 2: Identify Your Triggers

Which of your child's emotions trigger you most?

Common triggers:

- Their sadness (because you can't stand to see them hurt)
- Their anger (because you take it personally)
- Their anxiety (because you become anxious too)
- Their disappointment (because you feel like you failed them)
- Their fear (because you need them to feel safe)

Why this matters: The emotions that trigger you most are usually connected to your own unhealed wounds. Work on these in your own therapy.

Step 3: Create a Boundary Statement

Create a statement you can repeat to yourself when you notice you're absorbing their emotions:

"[Child's name]'s emotions are theirs to feel and process. I can be present without taking them on. I am steady. I am separate. I can support without absorbing."

Say this (silently) when you feel yourself being pulled into their emotional state.

Step 4: Practice the Pause

When your child is upset and you feel the urge to fix/rescue/absorb:

PAUSE

- Take three deep breaths
- Notice what's happening in your body
- Remind yourself: "Their emotions are not mine"
- Ask: "What does my child actually need right now?" (Usually presence, not fixing)
- Respond from calm, not from anxiety

This pause creates the space for a healthy response instead of a reactive one.

Step 5: Develop Your Own Emotional Regulation

You cannot maintain emotional boundaries if you can't regulate your own emotions.

Work on:

- Your own coping strategies
- Your own therapy
- Your own support system
- Your own spiritual practices

- Your own self-care

The stronger your own emotional center, the easier it is to be present to others without absorbing their emotions.

Step 6: Practice Differentiation

Differentiation is the ability to be emotionally connected to someone while remaining emotionally separate.

Practice saying:

- "I see you're hurting. That's your hurt. I'm here with you, but I'm not hurt."
- "You're anxious. I'm not anxious. I can be present to your anxiety without becoming anxious."
- "Your disappointment is real. My emotional state is separate from yours."

This might feel cold at first. It's not. It's healthy differentiation—the foundation of non-co-dependent love.

Step 7: Communicate Boundaries When Needed

Sometimes you need to verbally set a boundary:

When they want you to fix their emotions: "I hear that you're upset. I'm here to support you. But I can't make you feel better—only you can work through this feeling. How can I support you?"

When they're trying to make you responsible for their emotions: "I understand you're angry, but I'm not the reason you feel angry. Your feeling is yours to manage. I'm happy to talk about solutions, but I won't take responsibility for your emotion."

When you're being used as a therapist: "That sounds like something really important to work through. I think talking to a counselor would be helpful. Would you be open to that?"

When to Seek Outside Help

Sometimes your child's emotional struggles are too big for parenting to address alone. It's not a failure to seek professional help—it's wisdom.

Signs Your Child Needs Therapy/Counseling

Immediate help needed:

- Suicidal thoughts or self-harm
- Severe depression or anxiety
- Trauma
- Eating disorders
- Substance abuse
- Violent behavior

Call a crisis line or mental health professional immediately.

Consider therapy if:

- Emotions are significantly interfering with daily functioning
- They're withdrawn for extended periods
- Anxiety is limiting their activities
- Grief isn't resolving over time
- You see personality changes that concern you
- They're asking for help
- Your gut tells you something is wrong

How to Talk About Therapy

"I've noticed you've been really [anxious/sad/angry/struggling]. Sometimes it helps to talk to someone outside the family who's trained to help with these feelings. What do you think about talking to a counselor?"

Frame it as:

- A tool, like tutoring for emotions
- A sign of strength, not weakness
- Getting help from an expert
- Taking care of mental health like physical health

Don't frame it as:

- Punishment
- Evidence something is "wrong" with them
- Something to be ashamed of
- A failure on their or your part

Your Role When Your Child Is in Therapy

Do:

- Respect their privacy (what they share in therapy is confidential)
- Participate in family sessions if recommended
- Follow therapist's recommendations
- Ask generally how therapy is going
- Be supportive of the process

Don't:

- Demand to know everything they discuss
- Undermine the therapist
- Use therapy as a threat
- Make them feel broken for needing help

When You Need Help Setting Boundaries

If you're struggling to establish emotional boundaries with your children, **you might benefit from therapy for yourself.** This isn't weakness—it's wisdom.

A therapist can help you:

- Understand your own co-dependent patterns
- Process your childhood wounds
- Develop emotional regulation skills
- Learn to differentiate
- Break patterns before you pass them to your children

Consider finding a therapist who specializes in:

- Co-dependency
- Family systems
- Attachment
- Emotional regulation

The Freedom of Emotional Boundaries

Let me paint a picture of what life looks like when you've established healthy emotional boundaries with your children:

Your 10-year-old comes home upset because they weren't invited to a party.

You feel compassion. You understand why they're hurt. But you don't become hurt yourself. You don't take on their pain. You don't need to immediately fix it.

Instead, you:

- Listen to them describe what happened
- Validate their disappointment
- Ask what they think they want to do

- Trust them to work through the feeling
- Continue with your evening
- Sleep fine that night
- Check in the next day

You care deeply. But you don't carry it.

Your teenager is stressed about finals.

You notice their stress. You ask if they need anything. You offer to quiz them if helpful. But you don't become stressed yourself. You don't stay up worried about their grades. You don't track their studying. You don't take on their academic anxiety.

You trust them to manage their own stress while remaining available if they need support.

Your young adult calls from college upset about a breakup.

You listen. You empathize. You remember how painful heartbreak is. But you don't become devastated yourself. You don't need to drive there immediately to rescue them. You don't spend the week unable to function because they're hurting.

You express love and support. You remind them they'll get through this. You're available to talk more if they want. And then you go on with your life, trusting them to process their heartbreak.

This is freedom.

Freedom for them: They can have their emotions without feeling responsible for yours. They can work through feelings without you taking over. They develop emotional resilience.

Freedom for you: You can love deeply without being emotionally depleted. You can support without drowning. You can be present without absorbing.

This is what it means to bear one another's burdens (support in crisis) while each person bears their own load (manages daily emotional life).

This is healthy love. This is the opposite of co-dependency.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- Empathy (healthy) means feeling with someone while staying regulated; absorption (co-dependent) means losing boundaries and taking on their emotions
- Galatians 6:2 and 6:5 distinguish between bearing extraordinary burdens together and each person carrying their own daily emotional load
- Teaching emotional literacy and self-regulation requires maintaining your own emotional boundaries
- Using your children as therapists or confidants is harmful emotional incest that reverses the parent-child relationship
- Supporting without fixing requires presence, validation, and trust in their ability to handle their emotions
- Establishing emotional boundaries requires awareness, identifying triggers, practicing differentiation, and developing your own regulation

Remember: When you validate their emotions without owning them, you teach them emotional sobriety. Your job is not to feel their feelings for them, but to be present while they learn to feel and regulate their own emotions.

Action Steps This Week:

1. Keep an emotion journal for one week—track when you absorb vs. empathize
2. Identify your biggest emotional trigger with your child

3. Practice the "pause" technique next time your child is upset
 4. Review what you've shared with your children—have you crossed into emotional incest territory? Make repairs if needed.
 5. Use one of the emotional coaching scripts this week
-

Reflection Questions:

1. How do you know when you're empathizing vs. absorbing your child's emotions? What does each feel like in your body?
 2. Which of your child's emotions are hardest for you to witness without absorbing? Why might that be?
 3. Have you been using your child as a confidant in ways that are inappropriate? What needs to change?
 4. When your child is upset, what's your first instinct—to fix or to support? Why is fixing so tempting?
 5. What emotional boundaries do you most need to establish with your children? What makes this hard?
 6. How were emotional boundaries handled (or not handled) in your childhood? How is that affecting how you parent?
-

Prayer for Establishing Emotional Boundaries:

Father, this is so hard. My instinct is to absorb my children's pain, to carry what they're feeling, to make all their hurt go away. But I'm learning that's not love—it's enmeshment. Teach me the difference between empathy and absorption. Help me feel with my children without losing myself in their emotions. Give me the strength to stay steady when they're struggling, to be present without rescuing, to support without fixing. Show me where I've used my children to meet my own emotional needs, and give me courage to make that right. Help

me build their emotional resilience by trusting them to feel and process their own emotions. When I'm triggered by their feelings, help me pause and remember: their emotions are theirs, mine are mine. Both are valid, but they're separate. Teach me to love with boundaries, to care without carrying, to be present without drowning. Give me the wisdom to know when to intervene and when to step back. And Father, heal my own emotional wounds so I can model healthy emotional regulation for my children. Help me be the steady, calm presence they need. In Jesus' name, Amen.

*"Watch over your heart with all diligence, for from it flow the springs of life."
—Proverbs 4:23 (NASB)*

*"The Lord is near to the brokenhearted and saves those who are crushed in spirit."
—Psalm 34:18 (NASB)*

CHAPTER 9

Teaching Your Children to Say No: Boundaries Begin at Home

"But let your statement be, 'Yes, yes' or 'No, no'; anything beyond these is of evil."

—Matthew 5:37 (NASB)

Maria stood in her mother's kitchen during a family gathering, her 6-year-old daughter Sofia tucked behind her legs. Maria's aunt approached with arms outstretched.

"Sofia! Give your Tía a big hug!"

Sofia shrank back, shaking her head. "I don't want to."

The room went silent. Maria's mother shot her a look. *Make her hug your aunt. Don't be rude.*

Maria felt the familiar pressure—the family expectation, the fear of appearing to be raising a disrespectful child, the voice in her head from her own childhood: *You do what adults tell you. You don't say no. You're being selfish.*

But Maria had been working on this in therapy. She'd learned about body autonomy, about teaching children they have a voice, about the connection between being forced to hug relatives and not being able to say no to more dangerous situations later.

She took a breath and knelt down to Sofia's level. "You don't want to hug Tía right now?"

Sofia shook her head.

Maria stood and looked at her aunt, smiling kindly. "She's not ready for a hug right now. Would you like to give Tía a high-five instead, Sofia?"

Sofia nodded and offered a small high-five.

Maria's mother pulled her aside moments later. "You're making her rude. Children need to learn respect."

Maria replied gently, "I'm teaching her that her body is hers and her 'no' matters. That's not disrespect—that's self-respect. And someday, when someone asks her to do something she's uncomfortable with, I want her to remember that she's always had the right to say no."

Maria walked away knowing she'd done something radical and difficult and absolutely right.

This chapter addresses one of the most countercultural and challenging aspects of raising children who won't repeat co-dependent patterns: **teaching them that they have a "no"—and that their "no" matters, even when it's inconvenient for you.**

Most of us were raised in families where children's "no" didn't matter. We were taught that obedience meant saying "yes" to all adult requests, that setting boundaries was disrespectful, that our preferences were less important than others' comfort, and that we existed to meet adults' expectations.

We learned: Your needs don't matter. Your boundaries don't matter. Your discomfort doesn't matter. Say yes even when you want to say no. Compliance is virtue. People-pleasing is love.

And then we spent our adult years in therapy learning to set boundaries, say no without guilt, and stop abandoning ourselves to keep others comfortable.

Don't pass this burden to your children.

Instead, teach them from the beginning: Your voice matters. Your boundaries are valid. You can say no. Your body is yours. You don't owe anyone access to you. Respect includes respecting yourself, not just others.

This chapter will show you how to raise children who can say no—to you, to peers, to authority figures who overstep, to anyone who asks them to violate

their own boundaries. It will challenge many assumptions about respect, obedience, and what it means to raise "good" children.

And it will set your children free.

If They Can't Say No to You, They Can't Say No to Anyone

This is the foundational principle of this chapter: **The parent-child relationship is the training ground for all future boundary-setting.**

If your child cannot say "no" to you in appropriate contexts, they will not be able to say "no" in dangerous contexts later. The neural pathways, the emotional muscle, the sense of self-worth required to set boundaries—these are built first at home, with you.

Why This Is True

Psychologically: Children learn relational patterns first and most deeply from their parents. If the message at home is "Your no doesn't matter, only mine does," they internalize: "My boundaries are invalid. Others' wants override my needs."

Neurologically: The ability to say "no" requires activation of the prefrontal cortex (decision-making, assertiveness) over the limbic system (fear of rejection, need for approval). This neural pathway is built through practice. If children never practice saying "no" safely at home, the pathway isn't developed.

Developmentally: Children need to practice autonomy in low-stakes situations (what to wear, whether to hug someone, what to eat for snack) before they can exercise it in high-stakes situations (resisting peer pressure, refusing inappropriate touch, standing up to authority).

Spiritually: God gives us free will—even the ability to say "no" to Him. A God who values free will enough to allow us to reject Him surely expects us to honor our children's growing autonomy in age-appropriate ways.

What Happens When Children Can't Say No

Children who are never allowed to say "no" become adults who:

- Can't set boundaries in relationships
- Say "yes" when they mean "no"
- Feel guilty for having needs or preferences
- Are vulnerable to abuse and manipulation
- Chronically abandon themselves to please others
- Develop anxiety and depression from self-betrayal
- Attract predators who recognize their inability to resist
- End up in co-dependent relationships
- Don't know what they actually want because they've never been allowed to want

The research is clear: Children who are taught their bodily autonomy matters, whose "no" is respected in appropriate contexts, are:

- Less vulnerable to sexual abuse (predators look for children who have been trained to override their own discomfort)
- Better at resisting peer pressure
- More confident in their decision-making
- Less likely to develop eating disorders
- Better at recognizing unhealthy relationships
- More capable of assertiveness

Simply put: Teaching your child to say "no" to you is one of the most protective things you can do.

The Fear: "But Won't This Make Them Disrespectful?"

This is the fear that stops many parents from allowing their children to say "no." *If I let them say no to me, won't they become entitled, defiant, disrespectful brats who think they're in charge?*

The answer: No. Here's why:

Respect is not the same as compliance.

- Compliance = doing what you're told without question
- Respect = honoring appropriate authority while maintaining your own dignity

You can raise children who are both respectful AND have boundaries. In fact, children who can set boundaries are often MORE respectful because they're not simmering with resentment from constant self-abandonment.

Boundaries are not the same as defiance.

- Boundaries = "I'm not comfortable with this" (asserting self)
- Defiance = "I won't do what's required and you can't make me" (rebelling against authority)

The difference is in what you require and how you teach them to express disagreement.

Teaching them to say "no" in appropriate contexts doesn't mean they get to say "no" to everything. There's a crucial distinction between:

- Non-negotiable obedience (safety, morality, family values)
- Areas where their preference matters (personal choices, physical autonomy)

We'll explore this distinction throughout the chapter.

The Theological Foundation

Scripture is clear about the value of a clear "yes" and "no":

"But let your statement be, 'Yes, yes' or 'No, no'; anything beyond these is of evil."

—Matthew 5:37 (NASB)

Jesus is teaching integrity—that our words should be honest and direct. This applies to children too. We should be raising them to say what they mean, not to say "yes" when they mean "no" out of fear, guilt, or manipulation.

"The fear of man brings a snare, but he who trusts in the Lord will be exalted."

—Proverbs 29:25 (NASB)

People-pleasing is a snare—a trap. When we teach children they must always say "yes" to please others, we're teaching them to fear people more than to trust God. We're teaching them their worth comes from compliance rather than from being image-bearers of God.

"For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God? Or am I striving to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a bond-servant of Christ."

—Galatians 1:10 (NASB)

Paul is clear: We serve God, not the approval of others. Teaching our children to be people-pleasers is teaching them to serve the wrong master.

God values agency. He gives us choice. He doesn't force our "yes." The most important relationship in the universe—our relationship with God—is based on our freely chosen "yes," not coerced compliance.

If God respects our "no" (though He grieves when we say it), shouldn't we respect our children's "no" in appropriate contexts?

Respecting Their "No" on Age-Appropriate Matters

The key to this entire chapter is understanding: **Not everything is up to them, but many things can be.**

There are non-negotiable areas where they must obey. And there are many areas where their preference should be honored.

Non-Negotiable Areas (They Must Obey)

These are areas where "no" is not an option, where your authority is absolute, where their obedience is required:

Safety:

- Car seats/seatbelts
- Holding your hand in parking lots
- Not running into traffic
- Following safety rules

Morality/Values:

- Being kind (they don't get to say "I don't want to be kind")
- Being honest
- Following biblical/family values
- Respecting others' property

Basic Respect:

- Speaking respectfully (tone, words)
- Following household rules
- Participating in family responsibilities

Health/Hygiene:

- Necessary medical care
- Bathing/hygiene basics
- Adequate sleep for their age
- Eating enough to be healthy (not forcing specific foods, but ensuring nutrition)

Legal Requirements:

- School attendance
- Following laws

Family Commitments:

- Attending family events
- Participating in family practices (meals, church, etc.)

In these areas, you say: "This is not negotiable. This is a family rule/safety issue/moral issue. You don't get to choose. But you do get to choose how you feel about it and can express your feelings respectfully."

Negotiable Areas (They Can Say "No")

These are areas where their preference, comfort, and autonomy should be honored:

Physical Affection:

- Whether to hug, kiss, or physically touch others
- Sitting on laps
- Being tickled or physically played with
- Any physical contact that makes them uncomfortable

Personal Choices:

- What to wear (within weather-appropriate, modesty-appropriate bounds)
- How to style their hair
- How to decorate their space
- Which hobbies/interests to pursue
- What to eat (from provided options)
- Which activities to participate in (once current commitments are completed)

Preferences:

- Which book to read
- Which game to play
- Which friend to play with
- How to spend their free time
- Which college to attend (with guidance)

Personal Space:

- Privacy in bathroom
- Privacy in their room (age-appropriate)
- Personal belongings
- Personal thoughts/feelings

Minor Social Decisions:

- Which kids to be friends with
- Which party to attend
- How much to share about their life

In these areas, you say: "This is your choice. What would you like to do?"

Gray Areas (Negotiate/Discuss)

Some areas fall in between and require discussion, compromise, or case-by-case decisions:

- Bedtime (within healthy ranges)
- Screen time (within limits)
- Participation in activities you're paying for
- How much time with extended family

- Sharing personal information
- Household contribution level

In these areas, you say: "Let's talk about this. Here's what I need/value. What are your thoughts? How can we make this work for both of us?"

Age-Appropriate "No"

What children can say "no" to expands as they age:

Toddlers/Preschoolers (1-5):

- Physical affection
- What to wear (from 2-3 options)
- Which food to eat (from provided options)
- Which toy to play with
- Need for personal space/alone time

Elementary (6-11):

- All of the above, plus:
- Extracurricular activities (after completing current commitments)
- Friendships
- How to style hair/appearance
- Room decoration
- Free time activities
- Minor schedule preferences

Tweens/Teens (12-18):

- All of the above, plus:
- Which classes to take (within requirements)

- Job choices
- College decisions
- Dating (within family guidelines)
- Social commitments
- Future plans
- Increasing autonomy in most personal matters

Young Adults (18+):

- Everything except perhaps house rules if living with you

Teaching the Difference Between Obedience and People-Pleasing

This is perhaps the most important distinction in this chapter. **Obedience to legitimate authority is biblical. People-pleasing is sin.**

Obedience (Healthy)

What it is:

- Submitting to legitimate authority (parents, government, God) in appropriate spheres
- Following rules that are just, protective, and life-giving
- Respecting the hierarchy God has established
- Choosing to honor authority even when you disagree

What it looks like: "I don't want to go to bed, but I will because you're my parent and you've said it's bedtime."

"I disagree with this rule, but I'll follow it because I respect your authority."

"I don't understand why we have to do this, but I trust that you have good reasons."

What it teaches:

- Some authority is legitimate and should be honored
- Not everything is up for negotiation
- Submission can be an act of trust
- Rules often protect us even when we don't like them

People-Pleasing (Unhealthy)

What it is:

- Saying "yes" when you mean "no" to avoid disappointing others
- Abandoning your own needs/preferences/boundaries to keep others comfortable
- Measuring your worth by others' approval
- Being unable to tolerate others' disappointment
- Making others' feelings your responsibility

What it looks like: "I'll hug Grandma even though I don't want to because she'll be sad if I don't."

"I'll pretend to like this gift because I don't want to hurt their feelings."

"I'll do what my friends want even though I'm uncomfortable because I don't want them to be mad at me."

What it teaches:

- Others' feelings are your responsibility
- Your comfort doesn't matter
- You exist to meet others' needs
- Saying "no" is selfish or wrong
- Your worth depends on keeping others happy

How to Teach the Difference

1. Name it explicitly

"There's a difference between obeying legitimate authority and people-pleasing. Let me explain..."

"Obeying me when I set a safety rule is good. Saying yes to everything your friends want because you're afraid they'll be mad is people-pleasing."

2. Model it yourself

Your children are watching how you handle others' requests:

- Do you say "yes" to everything out of guilt?
- Can you say "no" respectfully to others?
- Do you abandon yourself to keep others comfortable?
- Do you teach them by example that boundaries are okay?

3. Discuss real-life examples

When you see people-pleasing in TV shows, movies, or real life, discuss it:

"Notice how she said yes even though she didn't want to? That's people-pleasing. What could she have said instead?"

"Why do you think he lied about liking it? Was he afraid to hurt their feelings?"

4. Celebrate when they honor themselves

When your child sets a boundary, even with you:

"I appreciate that you told me you don't want to hug me right now. It's important to listen to what your body is telling you."

"I'm proud of you for saying no when your friend wanted you to do something you were uncomfortable with. That takes courage."

5. Teach assertive communication

People-pleasers often say "yes" because they don't know how to say "no" kindly. Teach them:

"I appreciate the offer, but no thank you." "That doesn't work for me." "I'm not comfortable with that." "I need to think about it." "Not right now, but maybe another time."

When They Must Obey vs. When They Can Choose

Help them understand the categories:

"This is obedience—you must do this because:"

- It's a safety issue
- It's a moral issue
- It's a family value
- I'm your parent and this is my responsibility to require
- This is not negotiable

"This is your choice—you can say no because:"

- It's your body
- It's a personal preference
- It doesn't violate safety, morality, or family values
- Your autonomy matters here
- This is negotiable

Teaching discernment: "As you get older, you'll need to figure out when to obey authority and when authority is asking you to do something wrong. That's why we're practicing now. You're learning to tell the difference between legitimate authority and manipulation."

Timothy Keller writes: "The gospel is this: We are more sinful and flawed in ourselves than we ever dared believe, yet at the very same time we are more loved and accepted in Jesus Christ than we ever dared hope."

Apply this to obedience: Children are flawed and need authority (they're more in need of guidance than they think), yet they're loved image-bearers whose

agency matters (they're more valuable and autonomous than blind compliance would suggest).

Body Autonomy and Consent Education

This is the foundation of boundary-setting. If children don't learn that their body is theirs and that they control access to it, they won't be able to set boundaries in any other area.

What Body Autonomy Means

Body autonomy is the principle that: **My body belongs to me. I decide who touches it, how, when, and where.**

This doesn't mean children make all decisions about their bodies (you still make them wear seatbelts and go to the doctor). But it does mean:

- They have the right to refuse unwanted affection
- They learn that their physical comfort matters
- They understand consent from the earliest ages
- They know their body is theirs, not available for others' comfort

Why This Matters

Statistics on child sexual abuse:

- 1 in 4 girls and 1 in 13 boys experience sexual abuse
- 90% of abusers are known to the child
- Abusers specifically target children who have been taught to always obey adults and to override their own discomfort

Children who learn body autonomy:

- Are less vulnerable to abuse
- Will tell you if someone violates their boundaries
- Know something is wrong when an adult asks them to keep touch secret

- Are more likely to resist inappropriate requests
- Develop healthy boundaries in future relationships

Children who don't learn body autonomy:

- Are more vulnerable to predators
- Don't know when touch is inappropriate
- Feel they have no right to say no
- May not tell you about abuse because they think they had to comply
- Struggle with boundaries in adult relationships

How to Teach Body Autonomy

From the earliest ages:

1. Respect their "no" to affection

Don't force:

- Hugs
- Kisses
- Sitting on laps
- Being tickled
- Physical play they don't want

Instead: "Would you like to give Grandpa a hug goodbye?" If they say no: "That's okay. Would you like to wave or give a high-five instead?"

Never say:

- "Don't be rude, hug him!"
- "You're hurting his feelings!"
- "Just give her a quick hug!"

2. Use correct anatomical terms

Don't use cutesy names for body parts. Use penis, vulva, vagina, breasts, buttocks.

Why? Because:

- It removes shame from body parts
- It helps them communicate clearly if someone touches them inappropriately
- Abusers often use confusion about body parts to their advantage
- It teaches these are normal parts of the body

3. Teach the privacy principle

"Private parts are the parts covered by a swimsuit. Those parts are private. No one should touch them or ask to see them except for health reasons (doctor, parent helping with hygiene). If anyone asks to touch your private parts or asks you to touch theirs, you say no and tell me immediately."

4. Teach the difference between good touch, bad touch, and confusing touch

Good touch:

- Makes you feel safe and cared for
- Happens with permission
- Examples: hugs you want, high-fives, holding hands you're comfortable with

Bad touch:

- Hurts
- Is done to private parts (except medical/hygiene care)
- Makes you feel uncomfortable or scared

- Examples: hitting, touching private parts, unwanted restraint

Confusing touch:

- Might feel okay but something seems wrong
- Touch that an adult asks you to keep secret
- Touch that starts okay but becomes uncomfortable
- Examples: An adult who asks you to sit on their lap and then touches you in ways that feel weird, tickling that continues after you say stop

Teach: "If anyone touches you in a way that's bad or confusing, tell me immediately. You will never be in trouble for telling me, even if the person said to keep it secret."

5. Teach them they can say no to adults

This is hard for parents to teach because we want them to obey adults. But they need to know:

"Most adults are safe and have good intentions. But not all adults are safe. If an adult asks you to do something that makes you uncomfortable, especially anything involving your body or keeping secrets, you can say no. And then you tell me or another trusted adult immediately."

"If a teacher, coach, relative, friend's parent—anyone—touches you in a way that makes you uncomfortable or asks you to keep a secret about touch, you tell me. I will always believe you and you will never be in trouble for telling me."

6. Remove the shame from discussion

Make it normal to talk about bodies, boundaries, and comfort levels.

"Did you know some people don't like hugs? That's totally normal. Everyone has different comfort levels with touch."

"If someone touches you in a way you don't like, you can always tell them to stop. Your body is yours."

7. Practice saying no

Role-play: "What if I tried to tickle you and you didn't like it? What would you say?" "What if a friend wanted to hug you but you didn't want to be hugged? What would you say?"

Celebrate: "That's right! 'Please stop' or 'I don't want to' is perfect! Your body, your choice."

8. Respect their bathroom/changing privacy

As children get older (around age 5-6), start respecting their need for privacy in the bathroom and when changing. Knock on closed doors. Let them bathe/shower alone if capable.

This teaches: "Your body is yours. You deserve privacy."

9. Teach consent in action

"Can I brush your hair?" "Can I help you put on your shirt?" "Is it okay if I put medicine on your scrape?"

Modeling consent teaches them: "People should ask before touching you, even people who love you."

10. Be their safe person to tell

"If anyone ever touches you in a way that makes you uncomfortable, or asks you to keep touch a secret, you tell me immediately. I will always believe you. You will never be in trouble. My job is to keep you safe."

Then, if they ever do tell you: **Believe them. Don't question. Don't minimize. Take immediate action.**

Addressing Family Pushback

When you respect your child's "no" to affection, you'll face pushback:

"You're making them rude!" "When I was a kid, we had to hug everyone!"

"They're just being difficult!" "You're spoiling them!"

Your response:

"I'm teaching them that their body is theirs and consent matters. This is protective, not rude."

"Times have changed. We now understand how important body autonomy is for children's safety."

"They can show affection in other ways—a wave, high-five, or verbal greeting."

"I'd rather have a child who can say no to uncomfortable touch than one who's been trained to override their discomfort to keep adults happy."

Be prepared to:

- Set this boundary with extended family before visits
- Shield your child from shaming ("Grandma, we've talked about this. She doesn't have to hug. Would you like a high-five instead?")
- Leave situations if family won't respect this boundary

Your child's safety is more important than your relatives' feelings.**Preparing Them to Resist Peer Pressure**

When children have practiced saying "no" at home, they're equipped to say "no" to peers. But peer pressure is uniquely challenging because:

- Peers matter intensely (especially in adolescence)
- Rejection is painful
- Standing alone is hard
- The pressure is often subtle and relational rather than direct

Types of Peer Pressure

Direct pressure: "Come on, everyone's doing it!" "Don't be a baby!" "Just try it once!" "If you don't, we won't be your friend."

Indirect pressure:

- Seeing everyone else doing something
- Feeling left out if you don't participate
- Wanting to fit in
- Fear of being seen as different

Both types require the ability to say "no" when it matters.

Why Some Kids Can Resist and Others Can't

Kids who can resist peer pressure typically:

- Have strong sense of self and values
- Have practiced boundary-setting at home
- Believe their "no" is valid
- Have experienced parents respecting their "no"
- Aren't desperate for approval
- Have at least one other friend who shares their values
- Have parents who will support their choices even if unpopular

Kids who struggle with peer pressure typically:

- Have weak sense of self
- Haven't been allowed to say "no" at home
- Feel their needs/boundaries don't matter
- Are desperate for approval/belonging
- Have been trained to prioritize others' feelings over their own
- Are isolated without supportive friendships
- Have parents who might judge or punish them for being "different"

The connection: Children who've been allowed to practice saying "no" to you have the muscle to say "no" to peers.

How to Prepare Them

1. Build their identity in Christ, not peer approval

"Your worth comes from being God's beloved child, not from what your friends think of you."

"The most important opinion is God's, not your peers'."

"Being liked by everyone isn't the goal. Being faithful to who you are is."

2. Discuss peer pressure explicitly

Don't assume they'll figure it out. Talk about:

- What peer pressure is
- Why it's powerful
- How it happens (direct and indirect)
- How to recognize it
- How to resist it

3. Role-play

Practice scenarios:

Scenario: "Your friends are going to sneak out to a party. They want you to come."

Practice responses:

- "That's not something I'm comfortable with."
- "I'm going to pass."
- "My parents would kill me, so that's a no."
- "You guys go ahead. I'm staying home."

Scenario: "Everyone's vaping in the bathroom between classes. They offer you a hit."

Practice responses:

- "Nah, I'm good."
- "Not my thing."
- "I'm going to pass."
- "No thanks."

Practice until it feels natural. The more they've practiced, the easier it is in the moment.

4. Give them "outs"

- "If you're ever in a situation where you're being pressured and you want to leave, text me 'X' and I'll call you with an 'emergency' so you have an excuse to leave."
- "You can always use me as the excuse: 'My parents are so strict, they'll ground me forever!'"
- "If you need to leave a situation and need a ride, call me. No questions asked. I'll come get you."

This gives them an escape route without losing face.

5. Help them find like-minded peers

One friend who shares their values makes all the difference.

Facilitate connections through:

- Youth group
- Sports teams
- Clubs
- Activities that align with their interests

6. Celebrate when they resist pressure

"I heard you told your friends no when they wanted to do something you weren't comfortable with. That takes real courage. I'm proud of you."

7. Discuss scenarios when they happen

When you hear about peer pressure situations (from their life or others):

"What would you have done in that situation?" "What makes it hard to say no there?" "What gives you the courage to stand alone?"

8. Remind them of their values

"You've said you value honesty. Does this choice align with that value?"

"You've said you want to honor God. How does this decision fit with that?"

9. Normalize being different

"Not everyone has to do the same thing. It's okay to be the one who makes a different choice."

"Some of the best people in history were the ones who went against the crowd."

"Fitting in matters. But being faithful matters more."

When They Give In to Peer Pressure

They will sometimes. When it happens:

1. Don't overreact

"I heard what happened. Let's talk about it."

2. Understand what happened

"What made it hard to say no in that moment?" "What were you feeling?"

"What do you wish you'd done differently?"

3. Process without shame

"This is part of growing up—learning to stand by your values even when it's hard. You'll have another chance."

4. Problem-solve for next time

"What could you do differently if this situation comes up again?" "What would make it easier to say no?"

5. Consequence if needed

If they broke a family rule or law, there should be an appropriate consequence. But separate the consequence from shame.

"You broke the rule about [X]. The consequence is [Y]. I still love you. We all make mistakes. Let's talk about how to handle it differently next time."

Practical Role-Playing Scenarios

Role-playing is one of the most effective ways to prepare children to say "no" because it creates muscle memory for boundary-setting. Here are scenarios to practice by age:

Ages 5-7: Basic Boundary-Setting

Scenario 1: Unwanted Physical Contact

Adult: "Come give me a big hug!" Child: "No thank you. I don't want to hug right now." Adult: "Are you sure? I haven't seen you in so long!" Child: "I can give you a high-five instead."

Practice until confident. Celebrate!

Scenario 2: Sharing

Friend: "Let me play with your toy!" Child: "I'm playing with it right now. You can have a turn when I'm done." Friend: "But I want it now!" Child: "I'm still using it. You can wait your turn."

Scenario 3: Saying No to Adults

Adult: "Want some candy?" Child: "Let me ask my mom/dad first." OR: "No thank you."

Teaching point: "It's okay to say no to adults, even adults you know. Your 'no' matters."

Ages 8-11: More Complex Situations

Scenario 1: Friend Pressuring to Exclude Someone

Friend: "Let's not invite Emma to play with us. She's annoying." Child: "I like Emma. I want to include her." Friend: "But then we won't play with you!" Child: "That's your choice. I'm going to be kind to everyone."

Scenario 2: Being Asked to Keep a Secret

Adult: "This is our special secret. Don't tell your parents." Child: "I don't keep secrets from my parents. I'm going to tell them."

Teaching point: "Good surprises (like birthday gifts) are okay. Secrets that adults ask you to keep, especially about touch or things that make you uncomfortable, should always be told to me."

Scenario 3: Asked to Do Something Against Family Rules

Friend: "My parents aren't home. Come over and we can watch R-rated movies." Child: "I'm not allowed to do that. Want to come to my house instead?"

Scenario 4: Friend Asking to Copy Homework

Friend: "Let me copy your homework. I didn't finish mine." Child: "I can help you understand it, but I can't let you copy. That's cheating."

Ages 12-14: Peer Pressure

Scenario 1: Vaping/Substances

Friend: "Everyone's vaping in the bathroom. You should try it." Teen: "Nah, I'm good." Friend: "Come on, don't be lame." Teen: "I'm not interested. But you do you."

Scenario 2: Sexting/Inappropriate Content

Peer: "Send me a pic." Teen: "No. I don't send pictures like that." Peer: "Everyone does it." Teen: "I don't. And I'm blocking you if you keep asking."

Scenario 3: Lying to Parents

Friend: "Tell your parents you're sleeping at my house, but we're actually going to a party." Teen: "I'm not lying to my parents. If you want to go to the party, go. But I'm not covering for you."

Scenario 4: Shoplifting/Illegal Activity

Friend: "Let's see if we can steal this." Teen: "No way. I'm not doing that. I'm leaving if you are."

Ages 15-18: High-Stakes Situations

Scenario 1: Sexual Pressure

Partner: "If you really loved me, you'd [have sex/go further than you want]."
Teen: "Love doesn't mean I have to do something I'm not ready for. If you can't respect my boundaries, this relationship isn't healthy."

Scenario 2: Drinking and Driving

Friend: "I'm fine to drive. Get in the car." Teen: "You've been drinking. I'm not getting in. I'm calling someone else for a ride."

Scenario 3: Illegal Activity

Peers: "We're going to [break into somewhere/vandalize something/etc.]. Come with us." Teen: "I'm not doing that. That's illegal and stupid. I'm out."

Scenario 4: Pressure to Change Values

Peer: "You're being judgmental with your religious beliefs. You need to be more open-minded." Teen: "I respect that you believe differently. I'm not asking you to change your beliefs, and I'd appreciate you respecting mine."

After Each Role-Play

1. Process: "How did that feel?" "What was hardest about saying no?" "Did you notice your body wanting to give in?"

2. Discuss alternative responses: "What else could you have said?" "Which response feels most natural to you?"

3. Practice multiple times: Repetition builds confidence.

4. Celebrate: "Great job! You're getting really good at setting boundaries!"

Teaching Assertive Communication

Saying "no" requires assertive communication skills. Many children (especially those from co-dependent families) haven't learned the difference between passive, aggressive, and assertive communication.

The Three Styles

Passive (People-Pleasing):

- Prioritizes others' needs over your own
- Difficulty saying no
- Apologizes excessively
- Indirect communication
- Example: "Um, I mean, if you really want to, I guess it's okay... I don't want to make you mad..."

Aggressive (Dominating):

- Prioritizes your needs over others'
- Disrespectful of others' boundaries
- Hostile communication
- Example: "That's stupid. I'm not doing that. You're an idiot for even suggesting it."

Assertive (Healthy):

- Values both your needs and others'
- Clear, direct, respectful communication
- Can say no without guilt or hostility
- Example: "I understand you want to do that. I'm not comfortable with it, so I'm going to pass. Have fun though!"

Goal: Raise assertive communicators.

Teaching Assertive Communication

Components of assertive communication:

1. "I" statements "I'm not comfortable with that" (not "You're making me uncomfortable") "I need some space" (not "You're crowding me") "I disagree" (not "You're wrong")

2. Clear, direct language "No" not "Maybe" or "I don't know" "I don't want to" not "I guess I can't" "That doesn't work for me" not "Whatever you want"

3. Respectful tone Calm, steady voice Not hostile or apologetic Matter-of-fact

4. No over-explaining "No thank you" is sufficient Don't justify endlessly Brief explanation if wanted: "No thank you. That's not my thing."

5. Standing firm Don't cave when pressured "I understand you disagree. My answer is still no."

Practice Exercises

Exercise 1: The Broken Record

Teach them to repeat their boundary calmly when pressured:

Pressure: "Come on, just do it!" Response: "No thank you." Pressure:

"Everyone else is doing it!" Response: "I understand. My answer is no."

Pressure: "You're being lame!" Response: "I hear you. I'm still saying no."

Exercise 2: Reframing Passive to Assertive

Passive: "I don't know... I guess... if you really want me to... I mean, I don't really want to but..." Assertive: "I appreciate you asking, but I'm going to pass."

Passive: "Um, this is making me kind of uncomfortable but I don't want to make you mad so..." Assertive: "I'm not comfortable with this. I need to stop."

Practice reframing together.

Exercise 3: Reframing Aggressive to Assertive

Aggressive: "That's a stupid idea. I'm not doing that. You're dumb for even asking." Assertive: "I'm not interested in doing that. But feel free to do it yourself."

Aggressive: "Get away from me! Stop talking to me!" Assertive: "I need some space right now. Can we talk later?"

Celebrating When They Set Boundaries, Even With You

This might be the hardest part of this chapter for co-dependent parents: **You must celebrate when your child sets boundaries with YOU, even when it's inconvenient.**

Why This Is Hard

When your child says "no" to you:

- It feels like rejection
- It challenges your authority
- It's inconvenient
- You might feel hurt
- You might feel like you're losing control
- It triggers your own wounds about not mattering

But remember: Their "no" to you is practice for their "no" to dangerous situations later.

Examples of Children Setting Boundaries With Parents

Age 5: "I don't want to hug you right now."

Your response: ❌ "That's rude! I'm your mother! You have to hug me!" ✅
"Okay, I respect that. Maybe later?"

Age 8: "I don't want to talk about my day right now. I need some alone time."

Your response: ❌ "Don't shut me out! You always need to tell me everything!" ✅
"Okay, I understand. When you're ready to talk, I'm here."

Age 12: "I don't want to go to the family reunion. I want to stay home."

Your response: ❌ "Too bad. You're going and that's final." ✅ "I hear that you don't want to go. This is a family commitment that's important to me, so you do need to attend. But let's talk about what would make it easier for you. And maybe you can have a friend over afterward?"

(Notice: She has to go, but you acknowledged her preference and problem-solved.)

Age 15: "I don't want to share details about my relationship with you. It's private."

Your response: ❌ "I deserve to know everything! I'm your parent!" ✅ "I respect that you want some privacy. I do need to know if anything becomes concerning or unsafe. Can we agree that you'll tell me if you need help or if anything becomes unhealthy?"

Age 17: "I've decided I want to go to [different college than you wanted]. I know you wanted me to go to your alma mater, but this is my decision."

Your response: ❌ "After everything we've done for you! You're being so selfish!" ✅ "I had hoped you'd choose my school, but this is your life and your decision. Tell me what drew you to this other school."

How to Respond When They Set Boundaries

1. Pause before reacting

Take a breath. Notice your emotions. Don't respond from hurt or anger.

2. Acknowledge their boundary

"I hear that you're saying no to this." "I understand you need space right now."

"I recognize this is important to you."

3. Assess whether it's negotiable

- Is this a safety/morality/family value issue? (Non-negotiable)
- Is this a personal preference/autonomy issue? (Negotiable)
- Is this somewhere in between? (Discussion needed)

4. Respond accordingly

If negotiable: "Okay, I respect that."

If non-negotiable: "I understand you don't want to do this. It's not negotiable because [reason]. But I hear your feelings about it."

If in between: "Let's talk about this. I hear what you want. Here's what I need. How can we make this work?"

5. Celebrate the boundary-setting (at least internally)

"I'm noticing that you're getting better at expressing what you need. That's good."

Or internally: *She's practicing assertiveness. This is healthy. This is what I want for her.*

When Their "No" Hurts Your Feelings

It will. Especially if you're used to your children meeting your emotional needs.

When your teen says: "I don't want to go to dinner with you. I want to hang out with my friends."

You might feel: Rejected. Hurt. Like you don't matter anymore.

What to do:

1. Recognize these are your feelings, not their problem

They're not saying no to hurt you. They're saying no because they're individuating—which is healthy.

2. Process your feelings with other adults

Call a friend. Journal. Talk to your therapist. Don't make your child responsible for managing your hurt.

3. Respond maturely

✗ "Fine! I guess I don't matter to you anymore! Don't bother spending time with your mom!" ✓ "I'll miss you, but I understand you want time with friends. Have fun! Maybe we can do dinner another night?"

4. Work on why their "no" devastates you

If your child's "no" to spending time with you feels devastating:

- You may be too emotionally dependent on them
- Your identity may be too wrapped up in being needed
- You may need to develop your own friendships and life

This is your work to do, not theirs.

The Long-Term Gift

When you teach your children to say "no"—when you respect their "no" even when it's inconvenient, when you celebrate their boundary-setting, when you prepare them to resist pressure—here's what you give them:

You give them the ability to:

- Resist sexual pressure
- Refuse inappropriate touch
- Stand up to bullies
- Say no to substances

- Leave unhealthy relationships
- Set boundaries at work
- Protect their own children
- Honor themselves without guilt
- Recognize manipulation
- Trust their own instincts

You give them freedom from:

- Co-dependent relationships
- Abusive dynamics
- People-pleasing patterns
- Chronic self-abandonment
- The need for everyone's approval
- Guilt over having needs

You give them the courage to:

- Stand alone when necessary
- Choose the narrow path
- Follow God even when it's unpopular
- Be themselves rather than who others want them to be

And here's what often happens: **When children know they can say "no" to you, they're more likely to say "yes" to you out of genuine respect and love rather than fear or obligation.**

The parent who allows "no" often finds their child choosing to say "yes"—to time together, to advice, to relationship—because it's freely chosen, not coerced.

Freedom leads to relationship. Control leads to distance.

C.S. Lewis wrote: "Love is something more stern and splendid than mere kindness." Teaching your child to say "no" feels harsh in the moment, but it's the most loving thing you can do. It's stern and splendid love—love that protects, empowers, and liberates.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- If children can't say "no" to you in appropriate contexts, they can't say "no" to anyone—including predators, peer pressure, and abusive relationships
- Obedience to legitimate authority is biblical; people-pleasing that abandons self is sin
- Body autonomy is the foundation of boundary-setting and critical for protecting children from abuse
- Teaching children to set boundaries requires respecting their "no" even when inconvenient
- Assertive communication (not passive or aggressive) is the goal
- Role-playing and practicing "no" in safe scenarios builds the muscle for high-stakes situations

Remember: The child who can say no to you will be able to say no to destructive influences later. Teaching boundaries isn't disrespect—it's protection. Your child's safety and future health are more important than others' comfort or your own convenience.

Action Steps This Week:

1. Identify one area where you can start respecting your child's "no"
2. Have the body autonomy conversation (age-appropriate version)

3. Practice one role-play scenario with your child
 4. Celebrate when your child sets a boundary, even with you
 5. Address any family members who pressure your child to hug/kiss against their will
-

Reflection Questions:

1. How comfortable are you with your child saying "no" to you? What makes it hard?
 2. Were you allowed to say "no" as a child? How has that affected you?
 3. In what areas could you give your child more room to say "no" while still maintaining appropriate authority?
 4. How do you respond when extended family expects your child to show affection they're not comfortable with? What needs to change?
 5. What would it look like to celebrate your child's boundary-setting rather than seeing it as defiance?
 6. How are you teaching body autonomy? What conversations still need to happen?
-

Prayer for Teaching Boundaries:

Father, this is so countercultural and so hard. Everything in me wants my children to comply, to say yes, to make things easy. But I'm learning that teaching them to say "no" is one of the most protective, loving things I can do. Give me the courage to respect their "no" even when it's inconvenient. Help me celebrate their boundary-setting even when it challenges me. Teach me to distinguish between legitimate authority and control. Show me where I've been requiring people-pleasing instead of obedience. Protect my children from those who would take advantage of inability to say no. Give them strong

voices, clear boundaries, and the courage to stand alone when needed. Help me model healthy boundaries in my own life. When my feelings are hurt by their "no," help me process that with You and other adults, not with them. Give me wisdom to know when they must obey and when they can choose. And Father, protect them. Raise them to be people who can resist pressure, stand for truth, and honor themselves without guilt. Let them be free. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"But let your statement be, 'Yes, yes' or 'No, no'; anything beyond these is of evil."

—Matthew 5:37 (NASB)

"The fear of man brings a snare, but he who trusts in the Lord will be exalted."

—Proverbs 29:25 (NASB)

"For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God? Or am I striving to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a bond-servant of Christ."

—Galatians 1:10 (NASB)

CHAPTER 10

Natural Consequences: The Discipline of Reality

"Discipline your son while there is hope, and do not desire his death."

—Proverbs 19:18 (NASB)

"You will know them by their fruits... So every good tree bears good fruit, but the bad tree bears bad fruit."

—Matthew 7:16-17 (NASB)

Rachel stood in the school parking lot at 10:00 AM on a Tuesday morning, her son's forgotten math project in her hands. This was the third time this month she'd driven it to school for him. She'd already been late to work twice because of these rescue missions.

Her phone buzzed. A text from her 13-year-old: *Did you bring it? I told my teacher you were bringing it.*

Rachel stared at the project. She'd stayed up until midnight helping him finish it last night because he'd procrastinated for two weeks. Now she was standing in the school parking lot, about to bail him out again, while he'd already told his teacher she was coming.

Something inside her snapped—not in anger, but in clarity.

She got back in her car, project still in hand, and drove to work.

She texted back: *I'm not bringing it. You'll need to talk to your teacher about the consequence. I love you.*

The response was immediate: *WHAT?! Mom! I'm going to fail! Why are you doing this to me?!*

Her hands were shaking as she put her phone away. Every instinct screamed at her to turn around, to rescue him, to fix it. What if he failed? What if this hurt his grade? What if he was embarrassed? What if the teacher thought she was a bad mother?

But a quieter, stronger voice whispered: *What if this is the exact lesson he needs to learn? What if your rescuing him is preventing him from learning responsibility? What if you're teaching him that someone will always clean up his messes?*

Rachel kept driving to work.

That afternoon, her son came home angry and embarrassed. He'd received a zero on the project. He ranted about how she'd ruined his grade, how she didn't care about him, how he'd told his teacher she was bringing it.

Rachel listened. Then she said calmly: "I can see you're really upset. That must have been embarrassing. Let's talk about what happened. You had two weeks to work on this project. You procrastinated until the last minute. I helped you finish it last night, but it was your responsibility to get it to school. When you forgot it, you expected me to rescue you—like I have the last three times. But here's what I realized: every time I rescue you from the consequences of your choices, I prevent you from learning to be responsible. So I didn't bring it. The consequence is a zero. That's painful. But it's also reality. In the real world, no one will rescue you from your poor planning. I'm teaching you that now, while the stakes are low. I love you too much to keep rescuing you from your own choices."

Her son stared at her, speechless. Then he stomped to his room and slammed the door.

Rachel sat on the couch, tears streaming down her face, wondering if she'd done the right thing.

Three weeks later, the next project was due. Her son started it on day one. He worked on it consistently. He packed it carefully in his backpack the night before. He double-checked in the morning that he had everything.

He earned an A.

He never said "thank you" for letting him fail. But he learned the lesson. And Rachel learned something too: **Sometimes the most loving thing you can do is let your children experience the painful consequences of their choices.**

This chapter addresses one of the most difficult aspects of breaking co-dependent parenting patterns: **resisting the compulsion to rescue your children from natural consequences.**

Co-dependent parents rescue. We fix. We smooth over. We prevent pain. We intervene. We bail out. We soften consequences. We explain away their mistakes. We take responsibility for their choices.

We do this because:

- We can't tolerate their pain
- We feel responsible for their outcomes
- Their failures feel like our failures
- We're afraid of what consequences might mean for their future
- We need them to succeed so we feel like good parents
- We were never allowed to experience consequences ourselves

But here's the truth: **Rescuing prevents learning. Consequences teach.**

When you consistently rescue your children from the natural outcomes of their choices, you teach them:

- Actions don't have consequences
- Someone will always fix their problems
- They're not capable of handling difficulty
- They're not responsible for their choices
- The world will accommodate their poor planning

This creates adults who:

- Make poor decisions expecting someone to rescue them
- Don't learn from mistakes
- Blame others when things go wrong
- Lack resilience and problem-solving skills
- Enter adult life unprepared for reality

This chapter will teach you how to allow natural consequences to be your children's teacher, how to distinguish between neglect and healthy struggle, and how to resist the powerful urge to rescue when doing so would prevent crucial learning.

Rescuing Prevents Learning—Consequences Teach

Let's establish the foundational principle: **Reality is the best teacher when consequences are age-appropriate and safe.**

Why Consequences Are More Effective Than Rescue

Consequences teach because:

- 1. They're connected to the choice** When you touch a hot stove, you get burned. The consequence is directly and immediately connected to the action. This creates clear cause-and-effect learning.
- 2. They're memorable** Pain creates memory. We remember what hurts. A consequence creates a stronger memory trace than a warning or lecture.
- 3. They're impartial** Reality doesn't care about your excuses, your intentions, or your feelings. The consequence happens regardless. This teaches that actions have results independent of how we feel about them.
- 4. They're consistent** Natural consequences happen every time (gravity always works). This consistency teaches predictability and responsibility.

5. They transfer responsibility When you allow natural consequences, responsibility shifts from you (the rescuer) to them (the decision-maker). They learn: "My choices affect my outcomes."

6. They build resilience Experiencing and recovering from consequences teaches: "I can survive difficulty. I can learn from mistakes. I can fix problems I've created."

Why Rescuing Prevents Learning

When you consistently rescue, you teach:

1. Actions don't have consequences "I can do whatever I want and someone will fix it."

2. Someone else is responsible for their choices "When things go wrong, it's someone else's job to make it right."

3. They're not capable "I need someone to rescue me because I can't handle difficulty."

4. The world will accommodate them "Reality will bend to my needs and poor planning."

5. Failure is catastrophic "If I fail or face consequences, someone must intervene because I can't recover."

6. Effort and planning don't matter "I don't need to plan ahead or try hard because someone will bail me out."

The Biblical Principle of Sowing and Reaping

Scripture is clear about the connection between choices and consequences:

"Do not be deceived, God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, this he will also reap. For the one who sows to his own flesh will from the flesh reap corruption, but the one who sows to the Spirit will from the Spirit reap eternal life."

—Galatians 6:7-8 (NASB)

This is a foundational principle of reality: you reap what you sow. When you rescue your children from reaping what they've sown, you:

- Interfere with God's teaching method
- Prevent them from learning the connection between sowing and reaping
- Train them to expect grace without repentance, rescue without responsibility

God allows us to experience consequences. He doesn't rescue us from every painful result of our poor choices. In His wisdom, He knows that consequences teach us what lectures never could.

If God—who loves perfectly—allows consequences, shouldn't we?

The Discipline of Reality

Hebrews 12:7-11 teaches about discipline:

"It is for discipline that you endure; God deals with you as with sons; for what son is there whom his father does not discipline? But if you are without discipline, of which all have become partakers, then you are illegitimate children and not sons... All discipline for the moment seems not to be joyful, but sorrowful; yet to those who have been trained by it, afterwards it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness."

—Hebrews 12:7-8, 11 (NASB)

Notice: Discipline is "not joyful, but sorrowful" in the moment. It's painful. But "to those who have been trained by it, afterwards it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness."

Natural consequences are a form of discipline—not punishment you impose, but the natural result of choices. And like all discipline, they're:

- Painful in the moment
- Beneficial long-term
- Evidence that you love them enough to let them learn

- Training them for righteousness (right living)

When you rescue your children from natural consequences, you rob them of this training. You prioritize short-term comfort over long-term character.

Timothy Keller writes: "We modern people think of miracles as the breaking of the natural order, but Jesus meant them to be a restoration of the natural order." Similarly, natural consequences aren't breaking the loving relationship—they're restoring the natural order where choices have results and people learn from experience.

Age-Appropriate Consequences vs. Punishment

Before we go further, we must distinguish between three types of discipline: natural consequences, logical consequences, and punishment. Co-dependent parents often confuse these or avoid all three out of discomfort with their child's pain.

Natural Consequences

What they are: The automatic result of a choice, without parental intervention. Reality teaches the lesson.

Examples:

- Child doesn't wear a coat → Gets cold
- Child doesn't eat breakfast → Gets hungry
- Teen doesn't study → Fails the test
- Teen spends all their money → Can't buy what they want later
- Child doesn't put dirty clothes in hamper → Doesn't have clean clothes to wear
- Teen procrastinates on project → Pulls an all-nighter or gets a poor grade

Your role: Step back and let reality teach. Empathize without rescuing.

Why they're powerful: They're directly connected to the choice, they're impartial, and they happen without you being the "bad guy."

Logical Consequences

What they are: Consequences you impose when natural consequences aren't sufficient, safe, or timely. They're logically connected to the behavior.

Examples:

- Child repeatedly leaves bike in driveway → Bike is put away for a week (logical: if you can't take care of it, you lose access)
- Teen breaks curfew → Loses privilege of going out for a period (logical: violated trust = restricted freedom)
- Child damages someone's property → Works to pay for replacement (logical: you broke it, you fix it)
- Teen lies about where they are → Loses independence for a time (logical: can't be trusted = less freedom)

Your role: Calmly impose the consequence. Make it proportional, related to the offense, and educational.

Why they're effective: They teach the same lesson natural consequences would teach, but in situations where waiting for natural consequences would be dangerous or impractical.

Punishment

What it is: A penalty imposed to cause pain or discomfort as retribution for wrongdoing. Not necessarily connected to the offense.

Examples:

- Child talks back → Gets spanked (not related to offense)
- Teen comes home late → Loses phone for a month (disproportionate)

- Child makes a mistake → Parent yells, shames, or belittles (punitive, not educational)
- General bad behavior → "You're grounded!" with no connection to what was done

Problems with punishment:

- Often about parent's anger/frustration rather than teaching
- May not be connected to the offense
- Often disproportionate
- Focuses on pain rather than learning
- Can create resentment without growth
- Often shames rather than educates

The Distinction Matters

Co-dependent parents often:

- Avoid all consequences (even appropriate ones) because they can't tolerate their child's pain
- OR swing to harsh punishment out of frustration from having rescued too long

Healthy parents:

- Allow natural consequences when safe and age-appropriate
- Impose logical consequences when natural ones aren't sufficient
- Rarely need to punish because natural and logical consequences are doing the teaching

The Framework for Choosing

When deciding what type of discipline to use:

1. Is there a natural consequence that will safely teach the lesson? YES → Step back and let it happen NO → Go to step 2

2. Is there a logical consequence that fits? YES → Impose it calmly and proportionately NO → Go to step 3

3. Does this require direct intervention? YES → Address it directly with age-appropriate conversation and, if needed, discipline Consider whether this is a rare situation or a pattern

Most situations should be handled through natural or logical consequences, not punishment.

Natural Consequences by Age: What's Safe to Let Happen

The key question parents ask: "How do I know which consequences are safe to allow and which require my intervention?"

Here's a comprehensive guide by age, though remember: every child is different, and you must use wisdom about your specific child's maturity and capabilities.

Toddlers/Preschoolers (Ages 1-5)

Safe natural consequences:

Food:

- Won't eat what's offered → Gets hungry, eats at next meal
- Throws food → Meal is over
- Won't sit at table → Gets down, meal is over

Clothing:

- Refuses coat → Gets cold (if weather allows—not in dangerous cold)
- Insists on mismatched clothes → Wears mismatched clothes
- Won't wear shoes to playground → Can't play on equipment (safety requirement)

Play:

- Won't share toy → Friend doesn't want to play with them
- Throws toys → Toy is removed for a time
- Won't clean up → Can't get out new toys until current ones are cleaned

Social:

- Hits friend → Friend doesn't want to play
- Takes toy → Toy is taken back
- Is unkind → Other children avoid them

Self-care:

- Won't brush teeth (with minimal coaching) → Teeth feel gross (you still ensure they're brushed, but let them feel some discomfort first)
- Dumps out toy box repeatedly → Loses access to toy box for the day

NOT safe natural consequences at this age:

- Anything involving safety (traffic, heights, water, hot things)
- Nutrition (you ensure they eat enough even if not their preference)
- Hygiene (you ensure basic cleanliness even if they resist)
- Sleep (you ensure adequate sleep even if they resist)

Your role: At this age, you're balancing protection with allowing small consequences. The consequences are minor and teach basic cause-and-effect.

Elementary Age (Ages 6-11)**Safe natural consequences:****School:**

- Forgets homework at home → Gets zero or has to stay in at recess

- Doesn't study → Gets poor grade
- Procrastinates on project → Stressful last-minute work
- Forgets lunch → Has to buy lunch or is hungry (if school provides option)
- Doesn't turn in permission slip → Can't go on field trip

Money:

- Spends allowance immediately → No money for desired item later
- Loses money → It's gone
- Makes impulsive purchase → Regrets it, learns for next time

Belongings:

- Doesn't take care of bike → Bike breaks or is lost
- Loses jacket → Is cold or has to buy new one with own money
- Leaves belongings at friend's house → Doesn't have them when needed

Responsibilities:

- Doesn't feed pet → Pet is hungry (you eventually do it, but let them see the consequence)
- Doesn't do laundry → Favorite outfit isn't clean
- Doesn't pack backpack → Doesn't have what they need at school

Social:

- Is unkind to friend → Friend distances themselves
- Doesn't reciprocate invitations → Stops being invited
- Gossips → Friends don't trust them

Time Management:

- Plays instead of getting ready → Is rushed or late

- Dawdles at bedtime → Is tired the next day
- Doesn't manage time → Misses activity or opportunity

NOT safe natural consequences at this age:

- Severe academic consequences that affect long-term opportunities (one bad grade is fine; failing the year is not)
- Physical danger
- Legal consequences
- Situations involving predators or abuse
- Permanent damage to important relationships

Your role: You're stepping back significantly. You're allowing them to experience real consequences in most areas of daily life while still protecting from serious harm.

Tweens/Middle School (Ages 12-14)

Safe natural consequences:

Academic:

- All elementary consequences, plus:
- Failing a class due to lack of effort
- Not getting into desired program due to grades
- Teacher upset with them due to behavior
- Group project grade suffers because they didn't contribute

Financial:

- All elementary consequences, plus:
- Can't afford desired clothing/shoes if they've mismanaged money
- Has to work to pay for lost/damaged items

- Can't participate in paid activities if no money saved

Social:

- All elementary consequences, plus:
- Romantic rejection
- Friend group dynamics/exclusion (unless bullying)
- Social consequences of their behavior
- Missing social events due to poor planning/punishment

Responsibilities:

- All elementary consequences, plus:
- Loses job for poor performance or attendance
- Can't participate in activities due to incomplete responsibilities
- Room becomes unlivable due to messiness (as long as no health hazards)

Technology:

- Phone is damaged due to carelessness → Can't use it or must pay to fix
- Violates phone rules → Loses phone privileges
- Posts something regrettable → Deals with social fallout

NOT safe natural consequences at this age:

- Dangerous situations (substance use, dangerous activities, etc.)
- Situations involving serious law-breaking
- Situations that could cause permanent harm
- Situations involving adults taking advantage
- Severe consequences from one impulsive decision

Your role: You're coaching from the sidelines. You're allowing significant consequences while maintaining appropriate supervision and intervention for dangerous situations.

Teens/High School (Ages 15-18)

Safe natural consequences:

Academic:

- All previous, plus:
- Not graduating on time due to failed classes
- Not getting into college of choice due to grades
- Losing scholarship opportunities
- Having to attend community college or work first if unprepared

Financial:

- All previous, plus:
- Can't afford car/insurance due to poor money management
- Credit score affected by poor decisions (if they have credit card)
- Can't participate in senior activities without saved money

Driving:

- Speeding ticket → They pay it, insurance goes up (they pay increase)
- Parking ticket → They pay it
- Accident (if their fault) → They pay deductible, insurance increase
- Traffic violation → They deal with legal consequences

Work:

- Fired for poor performance → No job, no income
- Can't get references due to poor work history

- Can't find work due to poor reputation

Social:

- All previous, plus:
- Romantic heartbreak
- Friend group chooses others
- Reputation suffers due to their choices
- Missing out on experiences due to their decisions

College/Future:

- Doesn't apply to colleges → Fewer options
- Misses deadlines → Loses opportunities
- Doesn't pursue scholarships → Has more debt or can't attend desired school

NOT safe natural consequences at this age:

- Situations involving serious physical danger
- Situations that would result in legal record that would impact adult life disproportionately
- Situations involving predation or exploitation
- Decisions that would cause permanent, irreversible harm

Your role: You're transitioning to consultant. They're making most decisions and experiencing most consequences. You intervene only in truly dangerous or permanently damaging situations.

The General Principles

Allow consequences when:

- The consequence is age-appropriate

- The consequence is proportional to the choice
- The consequence won't cause permanent serious harm
- The lesson is valuable
- They're capable of handling the consequence
- You can emotionally tolerate them experiencing it

Intervene when:

- Physical safety is at stake
- Legal consequences would be disproportionate or permanent
- Abuse or exploitation is involved
- The consequence would cause irreversible harm
- They're genuinely unable to handle the situation
- There's a legitimate emergency

Logical Consequences When Natural Ones Aren't Safe

Sometimes natural consequences aren't enough or aren't safe. This is when logical consequences are appropriate.

Characteristics of Effective Logical Consequences

1. Related to the offense The consequence should logically connect to the behavior.

✗ Child is disrespectful → No TV for a week (unrelated) ✓ Child is disrespectful → Loses privilege of social time until they can speak respectfully (related: social privileges require respectful communication)

2. Proportional The consequence should fit the severity of the offense.

✗ Teen is 10 minutes late → Grounded for two months ✓ Teen is 10 minutes late → Curfew is moved 10 minutes earlier for a week to rebuild trust

3. Respectful Imposed calmly without shaming or belittling.

✗ "You're such an idiot! You're grounded!" ✓ "You broke the rule about [X]. The consequence is [Y]."

4. Reasonable Something you can and will enforce.

✗ "You're never using your phone again!" (You won't enforce this) ✓ "You've lost phone privileges for three days." (You can enforce this)

5. Revealed in advance when possible They should know what will happen if they violate the rule.

"The rule is you need to be home by 10:00. If you're late without calling, you'll lose the privilege of going out the following weekend. Do you understand?"

Examples of Logical Consequences

Offense: Child repeatedly leaves bike in driveway

Natural consequence: Might get run over (but we can't let this happen)

Logical consequence: "If you can't remember to put your bike away, you lose the privilege of riding it for a week. If it happens again after that, you'll lose it for longer."

Offense: Teen breaks curfew

Natural consequence: None immediate (which is why curfews exist)

Logical consequence: "You broke curfew. You've shown you can't be trusted with that level of freedom yet. Your curfew is now one hour earlier for the next two weeks. You can earn it back by being consistently on time."

Offense: Child damages someone's property

Natural consequence: The other person is upset (but property is still damaged)

Logical consequence: "You broke [item]. You need to replace it or pay for it. You'll work off the cost through extra chores or use your own money."

Offense: Teen lies about where they were

Natural consequence: None immediate

Logical consequence: "You lied about your location. We can't trust you right now. You'll need to check in every hour when you're out, and we'll verify your location for the next month. Trust has to be rebuilt."

Offense: Child won't complete chores

Natural consequence: Family is inconvenienced

Logical consequence: "Your screen time is dependent on your chores being done. No chores = no screens. When chores are complete, you can have screens."

How to Implement Logical Consequences

- 1. Stay calm** Don't impose consequences in anger. Take time to calm down if needed.
- 2. State the offense clearly** "You broke the rule about [X]."
- 3. Connect to the consequence** "Because you [offense], the consequence is [consequence]."
- 4. Explain the why briefly** "This consequence helps you learn [lesson]."
- 5. Enforce consistently** Don't back down. Don't negotiate. Don't rescue.
- 6. Allow them to feel** They'll be angry, upset, or sad. That's okay. Don't take their emotions personally.
- 7. Move on** Once the consequence is explained, move forward. Don't lecture, rehash, or shame.

How to Empathize Without Rescuing

This is perhaps the hardest skill for co-dependent parents to learn: **How do I be emotionally present to my child's pain from consequences without rescuing them from that pain?**

The Empathy-Without-Rescue Script

1. Acknowledge the pain "I can see you're really upset about [consequence]." "This is hard. I know you're disappointed." "You're experiencing the painful result of [choice]. That's difficult."

2. Validate the emotion "It's okay to be upset about this." "Anyone would feel frustrated in this situation." "I understand why you're sad/angry/disappointed."

3. Connect to the choice "You [made this choice], which led to [this consequence]." "This is what happens when [behavior]." "Actions have results. This is the result of [action]."

4. Express confidence "I know this is hard, but you can handle this." "You're strong enough to get through this." "This is a tough lesson, but you'll learn from it."

5. Offer support without rescue "I'm here if you want to talk about how to prevent this next time." "I'll support you emotionally, but I won't fix this for you." "What did you learn from this?"

6. Resist the rescue "I won't [bring your forgotten homework/call your teacher/pay for what you broke/bail you out]." "This is your consequence to handle."

Specific Scenarios

Scenario: Elementary child forgot homework, got a zero

 Rescuing response: "Oh no! That's terrible! Let me call your teacher and explain what happened. I'm sure she'll let you turn it in tomorrow. This isn't fair—you worked so hard on it!"

 Empathy without rescue: "I see you got a zero because you forgot your homework. That's disappointing. You worked hard on it. This is what happens when we forget things—there are consequences. What do you think you could do differently next time to remember it?"

Scenario: Teen spent all their money and can't buy desired item

✗ Rescuing response: "Well, I'll buy it for you this time. But next time you need to be more careful with your money!" (They learn: Someone will bail me out)

✓ Empathy without rescue: "I know you really want that. And you don't have the money because you spent it on other things. That's frustrating. This is how budgeting works—when you spend money on one thing, you can't spend it on something else. What will you do differently next time?"

Scenario: Middle schooler didn't study, failed test

✗ Rescuing response: "That teacher is so unfair! Let me email her and ask if you can retake it. Maybe we can get you a tutor. This is going to hurt your grade!"

✓ Empathy without rescue: "You failed the test. I know that feels bad. You chose not to study, and this is the result. What do you think you'll do differently for the next test?"

Scenario: Teen broke something expensive through carelessness

✗ Rescuing response: "Accidents happen! I'll replace it for you. Just be more careful next time, okay?"

✓ Empathy without rescue: "You broke [item] because you weren't being careful. That's expensive to replace. You'll need to pay for it. We can talk about whether you want to use your savings or do extra work to earn the money, but you're responsible for replacing it."

What Empathy Without Rescue Sounds Like

Notice the pattern:

1. I acknowledge your pain
2. I validate your feeling
3. I connect the consequence to the choice

4. I don't rescue you
5. I express confidence you can handle this
6. I help you think about what to do differently

It's compassionate but firm. It's kind but not enabling.

Managing Your Own Emotions

The hardest part of empathizing without rescuing is managing your own emotions when they're in pain.

When your child is upset about consequences, you might feel:

- Guilty (it's my fault they're in pain)
- Anxious (what if this damages them?)
- Desperate (I need to fix this)
- Protective (I must shield them)
- Responsible (I should have prevented this)

These feelings are about you, not about what your child needs.

What to do with these feelings:

1. Recognize them "I'm feeling guilty/anxious/desperate. That's my feeling, not necessarily what my child needs."

2. Remind yourself of the goal "I'm allowing this consequence because it teaches an important lesson. Short-term pain creates long-term wisdom."

3. Process with other adults Call a friend, your spouse, your therapist. Process your feelings with people who can support you, not with your child.

4. Practice self-regulation Breathe. Ground yourself. Remind yourself: "They can handle this. I can tolerate their discomfort. This is loving them well."

5. Resist the rescue urge When you want to call the teacher, drive the forgotten item to school, pay for what they broke—PAUSE. Sit with the discomfort. Don't act on the rescue impulse.

Resisting the Urge to Shield from All Pain

Co-dependent parents operate from a fundamental belief: *My child shouldn't suffer. Pain is bad. I must prevent all discomfort.*

But this belief is flawed. **Not all pain is bad. Some pain is necessary for growth.**

Types of Necessary Pain

- 1. The pain of consequences** Learning that choices have results
- 2. The pain of disappointment** Learning that life doesn't always go as hoped
- 3. The pain of failure** Learning to get back up and try again
- 4. The pain of hard work** Learning that effort and perseverance are required
- 5. The pain of rejection** Learning to survive social pain and find supportive relationships
- 6. The pain of growth** Learning to stretch beyond comfort zones

All of these pains teach crucial lessons. When you shield your children from these pains, you rob them of essential learning.

The Difference Between Harmful and Helpful Pain

Harmful pain:

- Abuse, trauma, exploitation
- Disproportionate consequences
- Chronic stress without relief
- Situations that damage development
- Pain that teaches helplessness rather than capability

Helpful pain:

- Natural consequences of choices
- Disappointment from not getting everything you want
- The discomfort of stretching beyond your comfort zone
- The frustration of working hard at something difficult
- The sadness of loss and change
- The embarrassment of making a mistake

Your job: Protect from harmful pain. Allow helpful pain.

Why Shielding Creates Fragility

When you shield children from all pain, you create what researchers call "psychological fragility"—the inability to cope with normal life stress and disappointment.

Fragile young adults:

- Fall apart at minor setbacks
- Can't handle criticism or failure
- Avoid challenges to avoid discomfort
- Expect the world to accommodate them
- Lack resilience and grit
- Struggle with anxiety and depression when reality doesn't match their protected upbringing

Research shows: Children who experience age-appropriate challenges, disappointments, and consequences develop:

- Resilience
- Problem-solving skills

- Emotional regulation
- Realistic expectations
- Grit and perseverance
- Mental health resilience

The principle: Like muscles, emotional resilience is built through use. Stress, within appropriate limits, makes us stronger.

The "Anti-Fragile" Approach

Nassim Nicholas Taleb coined the term "anti-fragile" to describe systems that get stronger through stress (as opposed to fragile systems that break under stress or robust systems that merely withstand stress).

You want to raise anti-fragile children—children who get stronger through facing challenges.

This requires:

- Exposing them to age-appropriate challenges
- Allowing them to struggle
- Letting them fail safely
- Not rescuing from every discomfort
- Teaching them to solve problems
- Helping them recover from setbacks

Think of it as inoculation: Small doses of difficulty build immunity to larger difficulties later.

When Parents Shield Too Much

Signs you might be over-protecting:

- Your child has never experienced significant disappointment
- You intervene at the first sign of struggle

- Your child expects accommodations and special treatment
- You make excuses for their behavior
- You fight their battles
- They haven't experienced natural consequences
- You buffer all discomfort

The result: Children who expect the world to bend to their needs and who fall apart when it doesn't.

The alternative: Allow age-appropriate struggle. Build anti-fragility.

When Consequences Need Parental Intervention

We've talked extensively about when to allow consequences. But there are times when parental intervention is necessary and appropriate.

When to Intervene

1. Safety issues

If natural consequences would result in:

- Physical harm
- Sexual exploitation
- Severe emotional trauma
- Legal consequences disproportionate to age/offense

Examples:

- Child wants to play in traffic → You physically intervene
- Teen is in a car with a drunk driver → You go get them
- Child is being abused → You immediately intervene and get help
- Teen is engaging in illegal activity that would result in criminal record → You intervene with consequences and help

2. When they're genuinely unable to handle it

If the consequence is beyond their developmental ability to process or recover from:

- Severe illness requiring care
- Trauma requiring professional help
- Situations that would cause lasting psychological damage
- Consequences that are disproportionate to their maturity level

3. When others are being harmed

If their choices are hurting others significantly:

- Bullying
- Theft
- Violence
- Property destruction

4. When consequences would foreclose future opportunities disproportionately

Some consequences are too severe relative to the choice:

- One stupid decision shouldn't permanently derail their future
- Use wisdom: Failing one test is appropriate. Failing out of school at 15 may require intervention.

5. When there's a pattern indicating a deeper problem

If consequences aren't changing behavior and there's evidence of:

- Mental health issues
- Learning disabilities
- Substance abuse

- Peer pressure they can't resist
- Other underlying issues

How to Intervene Without Rescuing

Even when intervention is necessary, there are ways to intervene that still maintain responsibility and teach lessons:

1. Intervene on the problem, not the consequence

Example: Your teen is failing all their classes.

✗ Wrong intervention: Do their homework for them, email all teachers, make excuses ✓ Right intervention: Assess whether there's a learning disability, mental health issue, or other problem. Get appropriate help. But still require them to do the work.

2. Provide support while maintaining responsibility

Example: Your child is being bullied.

✗ Wrong intervention: Call the bully's parents and yell at them, fight the battle completely ✓ Right intervention: Coach your child on responses, work with school, role-play strategies, possibly intervene with school administration if needed—but empower your child to handle what they can

3. Connect intervention to changed behavior

Example: Teen is in legal trouble.

✗ Wrong intervention: Pay for everything, get them out of all consequences, make excuses ✓ Right intervention: Get them legal help, but require they contribute financially, do community service, face appropriate consequences, and make amends

The Question to Ask

When deciding whether to intervene:

"Am I intervening because my child genuinely cannot handle this without help, or because I can't tolerate their discomfort?"

If it's the latter, don't intervene.

Preparing Them for a World That Won't Rescue Them

Here's a truth that should guide all your decisions about consequences: **The world will not rescue your children. You're preparing them for a reality that doesn't coddle.**

What the Real World Looks Like

In adulthood:

Employers won't rescue:

- Show up late? You're fired.
- Don't do your work? You're fired.
- Make excuses? No one cares.
- Need special accommodations for poor planning? Unlikely.

The legal system won't rescue:

- Break the law? You face consequences.
- Can't pay your fine? Court doesn't care about your reasons.
- Miss court date? Warrant issued.

Landlords won't rescue:

- Don't pay rent? Evicted.
- Damage property? You pay.
- Break lease? You lose deposit and face consequences.

Financial institutions won't rescue:

- Don't pay bills? Credit score drops, services shut off.

- Spend more than you make? Debt accumulates.
- File bankruptcy? Years of consequences.

Relationships won't rescue:

- Treat people poorly? They leave.
- Don't reciprocate? Friendships fade.
- Constant drama? People distance themselves.

The world doesn't care about:

- Your intentions
- Your feelings
- Your excuses
- Whether it's "fair"
- How hard things are for you

The world cares about:

- Did you fulfill your responsibilities?
- Did you meet your obligations?
- Can you be counted on?

If You Don't Teach This, Reality Will

If you rescue your children from consequences throughout childhood, they'll hit adult reality like a brick wall.

Imagine: Your 22-year-old doesn't show up for work because they "don't feel like it." They get fired. They call you crying, asking you to call their boss and explain.

You have two choices:

1. Call the boss (rescue—teaches them nothing, enables continued irresponsibility)
2. Say, "That's really hard. But you chose not to go to work, and getting fired is the consequence. What will you do now?"

If you've been rescuing them their whole life, Option 2 will feel impossible—for both of you. They won't know how to handle it. You won't know how to sit with their distress.

But if you've been allowing consequences since they were young, Option 2 is natural. They've learned: choices have consequences. When I mess up, I deal with it. Mom/Dad supports me emotionally but doesn't rescue me.

Teaching Progressively

Ages 5-11: Small, safe consequences (Forgot homework, got cold without jacket, spent their money)

Ages 12-14: Medium consequences with more at stake (Failed test, lost job, social consequences)

Ages 15-18: Significant consequences that prepare for adulthood (Serious academic consequences, financial consequences, driving consequences)

Ages 18+: Full adult consequences with you as emotional support only

By the time they're adults, consequences should feel normal and manageable because they've been experiencing and recovering from them their whole lives.

The Gift of Consequences

When you allow your children to experience appropriate consequences, you give them:

- 1. Reality testing** They learn how the world actually works.
- 2. Responsibility** They understand their choices affect their outcomes.
- 3. Resilience** They learn to recover from setbacks.

- 4. Problem-solving skills** They figure out how to fix mistakes they've made.
- 5. Humility** They learn they're not special or exempt from consequences.
- 6. Motivation** Natural consequences motivate change better than any lecture.
- 7. Confidence** "I messed up, faced the consequence, and survived. I can handle difficulty."
- 8. Preparation** They're ready for adult life because they've been practicing since childhood.

This is love. Not rescuing them. Not shielding them. Allowing them to learn from reality while you're still there to support them emotionally.

The Long-Term Story

Let me end with two stories—two paths.

Path One: The Rescued Child

Michael's parents rescued him from every consequence. Forgot homework? Mom brought it. Failed a test? Dad called the teacher. Got a speeding ticket? Parents paid it. Broke something? Parents replaced it. Lost his job? Parents supported him financially while he "figured things out."

At 25, Michael is living at home, can't keep a job, has credit card debt his parents are paying off, and blames everyone else when things go wrong. He lacks resilience, problem-solving skills, and motivation. He expects accommodation and rescue. He's frustrated that the "real world" doesn't work the way his home did.

His parents are exhausted, resentful, and wondering where they went wrong.

Path Two: The Consequence-Experienced Child

Sarah's parents allowed natural consequences from young ages. Forgot homework in elementary school? She got zeros and learned to pack her bag the night before. Spent all her money in middle school? She couldn't buy what she wanted and learned to budget. Got a speeding ticket at 16? She paid it

and her insurance increase. Failed a college class at 19? She retook it and paid for it herself, learning to take her education seriously.

At 25, Sarah has a job she's good at, lives independently, manages her money, and solves her own problems. When things go wrong, she figures out how to fix them. She knows how to recover from setbacks because she's been doing it her whole life. She calls her parents for advice and emotional support, but doesn't need them to rescue her.

Her parents are proud, enjoy their relationship with her as adults, and know they prepared her well.

Which Path Are You On?

Every time you face a decision about whether to rescue or allow consequences, you're choosing a path.

The rescue path feels loving in the moment. It stops their pain immediately. It makes you feel like a good parent. But long-term, it creates dependence, fragility, and entitlement.

The consequence path is harder in the moment. You have to tolerate their pain. You might feel like you're being cruel. But long-term, it creates resilience, responsibility, and capability.

Short-term pain from consequences creates long-term wisdom.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- Natural consequences are reality's way of teaching; rescuing prevents learning
- There are three types of discipline: natural consequences, logical consequences, and punishment—natural and logical are most effective

- Age-appropriate consequences expand as children mature; what's appropriate at 5 is different than at 15
- Empathy without rescue means acknowledging pain while not fixing the consequence
- Not all pain is harmful; some pain is necessary for growth and builds resilience
- Intervention is necessary only for safety issues, situations beyond their ability, or when others are being harmed
- The real world won't rescue them—you're preparing them for reality

Remember: Letting reality be the teacher isn't cruel—it's loving. Short-term pain from consequences creates long-term wisdom. Your job is to allow age-appropriate consequences while remaining emotionally supportive, not to rescue them from every discomfort.

Action Steps This Week:

1. Identify one area where you regularly rescue your child—commit to allowing the natural consequence this week
2. Practice the empathy-without-rescue script when consequences happen
3. Discuss with your spouse/co-parent: where are we over-rescuing? Where can we step back?
4. Write down your "intervention criteria"—when will you step in vs. step back?
5. When you want to rescue, pause and ask: "Am I acting from their need or my discomfort?"

Reflection Questions:

1. What consequences were you rescued from as a child? How did that affect you?
 2. What makes it hardest for you to allow your children to experience consequences? What are you afraid will happen?
 3. In what areas are you currently rescuing that you could step back from?
 4. How do you respond when your child is in pain from consequences? Can you stay steady and empathetic without rescuing?
 5. What would change if you truly believed that short-term pain from consequences creates long-term wisdom?
 6. How can you distinguish between your child genuinely needing help vs. your own inability to tolerate their discomfort?
-

Prayer for Allowing Consequences:

Father, this is so hard. Every instinct in me wants to rescue, to fix, to shield my children from all pain. But I'm learning that rescuing isn't always loving—sometimes it's preventing the lessons they need to learn. Give me wisdom to know when to intervene and when to step back. Give me courage to allow natural consequences even when it hurts to watch. Help me tolerate their discomfort without absorbing it or rushing to fix it. Teach me to empathize without enabling, to support without rescuing. When I want to call the teacher, drive the forgotten item to school, pay for what they've broken, or fix what they've messed up—stop me. Remind me that short-term pain creates long-term wisdom. Help me trust that You're using these consequences to teach them what I never could through lectures. Give them resilience through facing challenges. Give them problem-solving skills through fixing their own mistakes. Give them humility through experiencing that they're not exempt from consequences. And Father, give me the strength to sit with their pain without fixing it, knowing that I'm loving them well by preparing them for a world that won't rescue them. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"Do not be deceived, God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, this he will also reap."

—Galatians 6:7 (NASB)

"All discipline for the moment seems not to be joyful, but sorrowful; yet to those who have been trained by it, afterwards it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness."

—Hebrews 12:11 (NASB)

CHAPTER 11

Protection vs. Over-Functioning: Finding the Balance

"The Lord will protect you from all evil; He will keep your soul. The Lord will guard your going out and your coming in from this time forth and forever."
—Psalm 121:7-8 (NASB)

Jessica watched her 9-year-old son, Tyler, climb the rock wall at the park. Her heart pounded with every movement. What if he fell? What if he slipped? What if he got hurt?

She moved closer to the wall, ready to catch him. Her hands hovered beneath him as he climbed.

"Mom! You're too close! I can do this!" Tyler called down, annoyed.

"I just want to make sure you're safe," Jessica called back.

An older woman sitting on a nearby bench caught Jessica's eye. "He'll be fine," she said gently. "The wall isn't that high. He's a capable boy."

Jessica felt defensive. "I'm just being a good mother. Keeping him safe."

The woman smiled knowingly. "There's a difference between protecting him from real danger and protecting him from the discomfort of trying something hard. Which one are you doing?"

Jessica opened her mouth to argue—then stopped. She looked at Tyler, now near the top of the wall, focused and determined. Then she looked at her own trembling hands, positioned to catch him from a fall that probably wouldn't happen.

Am I protecting him from danger, or am I managing my own anxiety?

The question hit her like a wave. She slowly lowered her hands and took three steps back. Tyler reached the top, rang the bell, and climbed down. His face was radiant with pride.

"Did you see, Mom? I did it all by myself!"

"I saw. You were amazing."

That evening, Jessica journaled: *I've been calling it protection, but it's been control. I've been calling it keeping him safe, but it's been preventing him from growing. I've been calling it love, but it's been my anxiety wearing love's clothing.*

The realization was painful—and liberating.

This chapter addresses one of the most challenging aspects of breaking co-dependent parenting: **distinguishing between healthy protection and over-functioning disguised as care.**

Co-dependent parents often confuse these two things because the impulse feels the same: *I love my child. I want them safe. I want to help them.* But the outcomes are radically different.

Healthy protection: Keeps children safe from genuine danger while allowing them to face age-appropriate challenges that build capability.

Over-functioning: Prevents children from experiencing any discomfort, risk, or challenge—which prevents them from developing the skills they need to navigate life.

One builds confidence and capability. The other creates anxiety and dependence.

This chapter will help you find the balance—protecting what needs protecting while releasing what needs releasing. It will challenge you to examine whether your "protection" is actually about their safety or your anxiety. And it will give you practical tools for gradually releasing control while remaining appropriately involved.

Healthy Protection Looks Like Safety, Not Control

Let's start by defining what healthy protection actually is, because many co-dependent parents have never seen it modeled.

What Healthy Protection Is

Healthy protection is:

- 1. About genuine safety, not comfort** You protect them from actual danger (physical harm, abuse, exploitation), not from all discomfort (disappointment, challenge, appropriate struggle).
- 2. Age-appropriate** A toddler needs constant supervision. A teenager needs space to make choices. Protection scales with capability.
- 3. Teaching-oriented** You're teaching them how to protect themselves, not protecting them forever.
- 4. Empowering** Your protection increases their confidence: "My parent will keep me safe from real danger, but believes I can handle challenges."
- 5. Based on reality** You assess actual risk, not worst-case-scenario anxiety.
- 6. Proportional** The level of protection matches the level of actual danger.
- 7. Releasing over time** As they develop skills and judgment, your protective role decreases.

What Over-Functioning Looks Like

Over-functioning disguised as protection is:

- 1. About your anxiety, not their safety** You're managing your fear, not protecting them from real danger.
- 2. Age-inappropriate** You're protecting a 12-year-old like they're a toddler, or hovering over a 16-year-old like they're 5.
- 3. Preventing-oriented** You're preventing all struggle, which prevents growth.
- 4. Disempowering** Your "protection" communicates: "You're not capable. The world is too dangerous for you. You need me to keep you safe."

5. Based on catastrophic thinking You assess risk through the lens of worst-case scenarios rather than probability.

6. Disproportionate You treat low-risk situations as high-risk and respond with excessive control.

7. Increasing over time Instead of releasing as they mature, you tighten control because "the world is getting more dangerous."

The Key Distinction

Healthy protection asks: "Is this actually dangerous, or just uncomfortable/challenging?"

Over-functioning asks: "Could something possibly go wrong?"

The first question leads to wisdom. The second leads to paralysis and control.

Biblical Model: God's Protection

Scripture is full of God's promises of protection:

"For the Lord gives wisdom; from His mouth come knowledge and understanding. He stores up sound wisdom for the upright; He is a shield to those who walk in integrity, guarding the paths of justice, and He preserves the way of His godly ones."

—Proverbs 2:6-8 (NASB)

Notice what God does:

- Gives wisdom (teaches them to navigate)
- Stores up sound wisdom (equips them)
- Is a shield (protects from real danger)
- Guards their paths (watches over them)
- Preserves His people (keeps them safe)

But notice what God doesn't do:

- He doesn't prevent all difficulty

- He doesn't remove all challenges
- He doesn't make the path smooth
- He doesn't eliminate risk
- He doesn't keep us in a perpetual state of childhood

God protects while allowing struggle. He guards while permitting growth through challenge. He's present without preventing the difficulties that develop character.

"Do not fear, for I am with you; do not anxiously look about you, for I am your God. I will strengthen you, surely I will help you, surely I will uphold you with My righteous right hand."

—Isaiah 41:10 (NASB)

God doesn't say: "I'll remove all challenges." He says: "I'll be with you through them. I'll strengthen you. I'll help you. I'll uphold you."

This is the model: Be present. Provide genuine protection from real danger. But allow the challenges that build strength.

Helicopter, Bulldozer, and Lighthouse Parenting—Which Are You?

Parenting styles exist on a spectrum. Understanding where you fall helps you identify patterns to change.

Helicopter Parenting

What it is: Constantly hovering, monitoring every moment, swooping in at the first sign of difficulty.

What it looks like:

- Staying within arm's reach at all times
- Monitoring every interaction with peers
- Checking homework nightly (even in high school)
- Calling teachers regularly

- Making every decision for them
- Solving every problem before they can try
- Constant texting/calling to check on them
- Micromanaging their schedule, activities, friendships

The message it sends: "You're not capable. The world is dangerous. You can't handle anything without me. I don't trust you."

What it creates:

- Anxiety (they internalize that the world is too dangerous for them)
- Dependence (they don't develop problem-solving skills)
- Resentment (they feel suffocated)
- Incompetence (they never learn to do things themselves)
- Risk aversion (they avoid challenges because they've learned they can't handle difficulty)

Jessica's helicopter example: Hovering under Tyler at the climbing wall, hands ready to catch him from a fall that likely wouldn't happen, preventing him from the experience of climbing independently.

Bulldozer Parenting (also called Snowplow or Lawnmower Parenting)

What it is: Going ahead of your child to clear all obstacles, smooth all difficulties, and prevent all challenges.

What it looks like:

- Calling ahead to make sure everything is arranged perfectly
- Talking to teachers/coaches to ensure your child gets preferential treatment
- Removing all obstacles from their path
- Making sure they never experience disappointment

- Fighting their battles before they know there's a battle
- Engineering success by eliminating failure possibilities
- Calling college professors about grades
- Intervening in their adult job situations

The message it sends: "You can't handle difficulty. I'll clear your path. You shouldn't have to face challenges. The world should accommodate you."

What it creates:

- Entitlement (they expect the world to accommodate them)
- Fragility (they fall apart at minor setbacks)
- Lack of resilience (they've never developed it)
- Unrealistic expectations (they don't understand how the real world works)
- Inability to problem-solve (they've never had to)
- Shock when entering adulthood (the world doesn't bulldoze for them)

Example: The parent who calls their college-age child's employer to complain about their work schedule, or who does their teenager's entire college application process.

Lighthouse Parenting (Healthy Protection)

What it is: Being a steady, visible presence—a beacon—while allowing children to navigate their own path. Available for guidance, but not controlling their journey.

What it looks like:

- Providing a safe base while encouraging exploration
- Being available when they need help
- Teaching skills rather than doing things for them

- Allowing age-appropriate risk and challenge
- Setting clear boundaries and expectations
- Letting them experience consequences
- Offering guidance when asked
- Trusting their growing capability
- Monitoring without micromanaging
- Protecting from real danger while allowing healthy struggle

The message it sends: "I'm here. You're capable. The world has challenges, but you can handle them. I believe in you. When you need genuine help, I'm available."

What it creates:

- Confidence (they know they're capable)
- Resilience (they've faced and overcome challenges)
- Problem-solving skills (they've practiced)
- Realistic expectations (they understand how the world works)
- Security (they know you're there if truly needed)
- Independence (they can navigate life)
- Strong relationship with you (not based on dependence, but on choice)

What it looks like practically:

Toddler at playground: You're on a bench nearby, watching. You don't hover under them at the slide. You let them climb, fall (from safe heights), and figure things out. If something is genuinely dangerous, you intervene. Otherwise, you're visible and available but not controlling.

Elementary kid with homework: You've set up a time and space for homework. You're available if they have questions. But you don't sit with

them, check every answer, or do it for them. If they forget it, they experience the consequence.

Teen learning to drive: You teach them carefully. You supervise practice. You set clear rules. But you gradually release control as they demonstrate capability. You don't text constantly when they're driving or track their every movement.

Young adult at college: You're available by phone. You care about their life. But you don't call their professors, manage their schedule, or solve their problems. You're a consultant they can call when needed.

Self-Assessment: Which Style Are You?

Answer honestly:

Helicopter indicators:

- ☐ I stay within a few feet of my child most of the time
- ☐ I intervene before they even try to solve a problem
- ☐ I monitor their every interaction
- ☐ I'm constantly worried something will go wrong
- ☐ My child rarely attempts things without my help
- ☐ I check their work/homework to make sure it's perfect
- ☐ I text/call multiple times a day to check on them

Bulldozer indicators:

- ☐ I contact teachers/coaches regularly to smooth things for my child
- ☐ I make sure my child never experiences significant disappointment
- ☐ I remove obstacles before they encounter them
- ☐ I've intervened with employers or other adults on my child's behalf
- ☐ I arrange things so my child has advantages others don't

- ☐ I make excuses to others for my child's behavior
- ☐ My child expects accommodations and special treatment

Lighthouse indicators:

- ☐ I'm available but not hovering
- ☐ I let my child try things before offering help
- ☐ I allow age-appropriate risks and challenges
- ☐ I'm monitoring from a distance, not micromanaging
- ☐ My child knows I'm there if they need me
- ☐ I teach skills and then release them to practice
- ☐ I allow natural consequences while providing emotional support

If you checked mostly helicopter or bulldozer indicators, this chapter is especially important for you.

Timothy Keller writes: "The gospel is this: We are more sinful and flawed in ourselves than we ever dared believe, yet at the very same time we are more loved and accepted in Jesus Christ than we ever dared hope." Apply this to parenting: Our children are more capable than our anxiety tells us, yet at the same time they're more in need of real protection than our control provides. Both are true.

Protecting Them from Danger vs. Protecting Them from Growth

The critical skill for healthy parenting is distinguishing between danger (which requires protection) and growth opportunities (which require release).

Real Dangers That Require Protection

Physical dangers:

- Traffic
- Drowning

- Falls from dangerous heights
- Poisoning
- Weapons
- Fire
- Extreme weather

Interpersonal dangers:

- Physical, sexual, or emotional abuse
- Exploitation by adults
- Dangerous individuals (predators)
- Situations involving illegal activity with serious consequences
- Situations significantly beyond their developmental ability

These require intervention, protection, and supervision appropriate to age.

Growth Opportunities Often Mistaken for Danger

Physical challenges:

- Climbing (within reason for age)
- Learning to ride a bike (they might fall)
- Playing sports (they might get hurt)
- Walking to school or a friend's house (age-appropriate)
- Learning to use tools (with teaching and supervision)

Emotional challenges:

- Friendship conflicts
- Romantic disappointments

- Not making the team
- Teacher who doesn't love them
- Peer group dynamics
- Academic struggles
- Social rejection

Social challenges:

- Making new friends
- Navigating social hierarchies
- Speaking up for themselves
- Setting their own boundaries
- Handling peer pressure

Academic/achievement challenges:

- Difficult classes
- Projects they have to work hard on
- Failure and having to try again
- Learning they're not the best at everything
- Having to ask for help

Independence challenges:

- Being home alone (age-appropriate)
- Walking places alone
- Managing their own schedule
- Making their own decisions
- Experiencing consequences

These don't require protection. They require coaching from the sidelines and belief in their capability.

The Risk Assessment Question

When deciding whether to intervene or step back, ask:

"Is this genuinely dangerous, or does it just feel scary to me?"

Follow up questions:

- What's the actual probability of harm? (Not worst-case scenario—actual probability)
- What's the severity if harm occurs? (Scratched knee vs. broken bone vs. death)
- Is this age-appropriate risk? (Every age has appropriate risks)
- What will they learn by doing this?
- What will they lose if I prevent this?

Example: Child wants to climb a tree

Anxious assessment: "They could fall and break their neck and die! Absolutely not!"

Realistic assessment: "They could fall. What's the height? Are the branches sturdy? How old is my child? Do they have climbing experience? What's the likely injury if they fall—scraped knee, sprained ankle, or something more serious? What will they gain from learning to climb safely?"

Decision: If child is 8, tree is climbable with sturdy branches, height isn't excessive, and child has some experience: "Yes, you can climb. Here are the safety rules: test each branch, don't go higher than you're comfortable, if a branch cracks stop climbing. I'll be right here watching."

What they learn: I can do challenging things. My parent believes I'm capable. I can assess risk and be careful.

Creating a Risk Assessment Framework

For each situation, rate:

Probability of harm:

- Low (1-2): Very unlikely anything bad will happen
- Medium (3-4): Some chance of minor harm
- High (5): Likely to result in harm

Severity if harm occurs:

- Low (1-2): Minor scrape, temporary disappointment
- Medium (3-4): Injury requiring medical attention, significant emotional pain
- High (5): Life-threatening injury, severe trauma

If probability is low and severity is low-medium: Let them try with minimal supervision.

If probability is medium or severity is high: Provide teaching, supervision, and clear safety rules.

If probability is high and severity is high: This is genuinely dangerous. Intervene or prohibit.

Most situations co-dependent parents worry about are low probability and low-to-medium severity. The anxiety feels like high probability, high severity—but it's not.

Preparing, Not Preventing

This principle might be the most important in the chapter: **Your job is to prepare your child for the path, not to clear the path for them.**

The Difference

Preventing (bulldozer approach): "I'll make sure you never face this challenge." "I'll remove this obstacle so you don't have to deal with it." "I'll call ahead and arrange everything perfectly."

Preparing (lighthouse approach): "Here's what you might encounter. Let's talk about how to handle it." "This will be challenging. Let me teach you skills to navigate it." "You're going to face obstacles. Here's how to overcome them."

What Preparing Looks Like at Each Age

Toddler/Preschool:

Preventing: Never letting them try anything that might result in frustration or minor injury.

Preparing:

- Teaching them how to climb safely
- Showing them how to ask for help
- Letting them experience small struggles (getting dressed, opening containers)
- Teaching basic safety rules

Elementary:

Preventing: Solving all friendship conflicts for them, doing their projects, contacting teachers about every issue.

Preparing:

- Role-playing social situations
- Teaching conflict resolution skills
- Showing them how to advocate with teachers
- Letting them experience and recover from small failures

Tween/Teen:

Preventing: Micromanaging their schedule, monitoring every online interaction, preventing all risk.

Preparing:

- Teaching digital safety
- Discussing peer pressure scenarios
- Teaching them to assess risk
- Letting them make increasing numbers of their own decisions and experience outcomes

Young Adult:

Preventing: Managing their college experience, calling professors, solving their adult problems.

Preparing:

- Having discussed life skills before they leave
- Teaching them resources for when they need help
- Being available for consultation but not intervention
- Trusting them to handle adult life

The Questions to Guide Preparing

Instead of: "How can I prevent them from facing this difficulty?"

Ask:

- "What skills do they need to navigate this?"
- "How can I teach them to handle this type of situation?"
- "What will they learn by going through this?"
- "How can I support without taking over?"
- "What's my role in preparing them vs. protecting them?"

Teaching the Skills

Preparation requires teaching skills:

Safety skills:

- How to cross the street safely
- How to recognize unsafe adults or situations
- How to call for help
- How to assess risk
- How to trust their instincts

Social skills:

- How to make friends
- How to handle conflict
- How to set boundaries
- How to recognize healthy vs. unhealthy relationships
- How to advocate for themselves

Life skills:

- How to manage time
- How to organize tasks
- How to problem-solve
- How to ask for help when needed
- How to recover from failure

You're not sending them into the world unprepared. You're equipping them with tools, then trusting them to use those tools.

Paul David Tripp writes: "Parenting isn't about us getting our children to do what we want; it's about faithfully representing God's grace to our children

and trusting him to produce fruit in their lives in his own way." We represent God's grace by equipping, not by controlling. By preparing, not by preventing.

Your Anxiety Is Not a Good Parenting Guide

This section might be the hardest to accept: **The fact that something makes you anxious doesn't mean it's dangerous.**

Co-dependent parents often parent from anxiety rather than from wisdom. Every decision is filtered through "Does this make me anxious?" instead of "What does my child need for healthy development?"

Why Anxiety Is a Poor Guide

- 1. Anxiety is about you, not them** Your anxiety is your emotional state. It's information about your internal experience, not about actual danger.
- 2. Anxiety amplifies unlikely scenarios** Anxious thinking gravitates to worst-case scenarios regardless of probability. "They could get kidnapped!" is possible but statistically very unlikely.
- 3. Anxiety is often about your past, not their present** If you experienced trauma, loss, or harm, your anxiety might be reacting to your history rather than their reality.
- 4. Anxiety prevents growth** If you parent from anxiety, you'll prevent everything that makes you anxious—which is most of childhood development.
- 5. Anxiety is contagious** Your child will absorb your anxiety and learn that the world is terrifying.

The Anxiety Cycle

- 1. Something triggers your anxiety** (Child wants to walk to friend's house, try a new activity, make their own decision)
- 2. You feel intense fear/worry** (What if they get lost? What if they get hurt? What if something goes wrong?)

3. You intervene to relieve your anxiety (You drive them, say no, take over the decision)

4. Your anxiety temporarily reduces (You feel relief—they're "safe")

5. Your child's dependency increases (They learn they can't handle things; you learn you can't tolerate their independence)

6. Next time, your anxiety is stronger (Because you didn't build tolerance; you reinforced the fear)

This cycle creates increasing dependence and anxiety for both of you.

Breaking the Anxiety Cycle

1. Recognize when you're parenting from anxiety

Signs:

- Your decision is based on "what if" worst-case thinking
- You're physically agitated (heart racing, tense, can't relax)
- You're imagining disasters that are statistically unlikely
- Your response feels disproportionate to the actual situation
- You're more focused on your fear than on their capability

2. Pause and assess

Before responding from anxiety:

- Take three deep breaths
- Ask: "Is this actually dangerous or does it just feel scary?"
- Consider: "What's the real probability of harm?"
- Evaluate: "What does my child need for growth?"

3. Separate your history from their present

Ask yourself:

- Is this about something that happened to me?
- Is this about a fear from my childhood?
- Am I projecting my experience onto their situation?
- Is this about my trauma or their reality?

4. Get support for your anxiety

If your anxiety is significantly affecting your parenting:

- Work with a therapist
- Practice anxiety management techniques
- Process your fears with other adults, not with your child
- Consider whether you need treatment for anxiety disorder

5. Act from wisdom, not from fear

Make the decision based on:

- What's actually safe/dangerous
- What your child needs for development
- Age-appropriate risk assessment
- Reality, not worst-case scenarios

Then tolerate your anxiety while they do the scary thing.

Your Anxiety, Their Growth

Here's the hard truth: Sometimes the most loving thing you can do is act against your anxiety for the sake of your child's growth.

Your anxiety says: "Don't let them walk to school alone—they could get kidnapped!"

Wisdom says: "Walking to school builds independence. The statistical risk is extremely low. They need this skill. I'll teach them safety rules and let them go, even though I'm anxious."

You make the wise choice and tolerate the anxiety.

The result:

- Your child gains confidence and independence
- You build tolerance for your anxiety
- Your child doesn't absorb your fear
- Next time, it's slightly easier

If you always parent from anxiety, you teach your child that the world is too dangerous for them—which creates anxious, dependent children who become anxious, dependent adults.

The Serenity Prayer Applied to Parenting

"God, grant me the serenity to accept the things I cannot change, courage to change the things I can, and wisdom to know the difference."

Applied to parenting anxiety:

Accept: I cannot prevent all harm. I cannot control outcomes. I cannot guarantee my child's safety in every moment.

Change: I can teach them skills. I can prepare them. I can manage my own anxiety.

Wisdom: I can distinguish between real danger (which I address) and imagined danger (which I tolerate).

Graduated Exposure to Age-Appropriate Challenges

The path from dependence to independence requires gradual exposure to increasing challenges. You can't keep them in a protective bubble until 18 and then expect them to suddenly function independently.

The Principle: Inoculation

Medical inoculation works by exposing the body to a small, safe dose of a pathogen so it can build immunity. When exposed to the real thing later, the body is prepared.

Psychological/developmental inoculation works the same way: Expose children to small, safe challenges so they build the skills to handle larger challenges later.

If you never expose them to challenges, they have no immunity when they face real-world difficulty.

Creating a Graduated Independence Plan

For each skill/area, map out a progression:

Example: Walking Places Independently

Age 5-6:

- Walk to mailbox and back while you watch from porch
- Walk to neighbor's house (you watch them arrive)

Age 7-8:

- Walk around the block alone
- Walk to nearby friend's house (you don't watch)

Age 9-10:

- Walk to school with friends
- Walk to local park with friends

Age 11-12:

- Walk or bike to activities in neighborhood
- Take public transportation with friends (if available)

Age 13-14:

- Walk/bike to more distant locations
- Navigate public transportation alone

Each step builds on the previous. You're gradually releasing.

Example: Making Decisions Independently

Age 5-6:

- Choose between two outfits
- Choose what to play
- Choose snack from two options

Age 7-8:

- Choose own activities for weekend
- Choose which friends to invite over
- Choose what to order at restaurant

Age 9-10:

- Choose own extracurriculars
- Manage own homework/schedule
- Choose own clothing (within guidelines)

Age 11-12:

- Choose how to spend their money
- Choose which activities to continue/quit
- Make most daily decisions independently

Age 13-14:

- Choose own schedule/priorities
- Make most personal decisions

- Increasing autonomy in most areas

Age 15-18:

- Make nearly all decisions (within family values)
- Experience full consequences of choices
- Manage own life with minimal oversight

The Key: Small Steps, Consistent Progress

Don't: Keep them dependent until 18, then suddenly release them to college.

Do: Gradually increase independence at every age, so by 18 they've been practicing for years.

Risk Exposure by Age

Every age has appropriate risks:

Toddler/Preschool:

- Risk of falling while climbing (from appropriate heights)
- Risk of frustration with challenging tasks
- Risk of conflict with peers
- Risk of being told "no" by adults other than parents

Elementary:

- Risk of getting hurt in sports or play
- Risk of social rejection or friendship conflict
- Risk of academic failure on small stakes (one test, one project)
- Risk of getting lost (in controlled environments with teaching)
- Risk of being away from parents (sleepovers, camps)

Tween/Middle School:

- Risk of peer pressure situations
- Risk of significant social challenges
- Risk of larger academic stakes
- Risk of more independence (walking/biking places)
- Risk of making poor choices and facing consequences

Teen/High School:

- Risk of driving (with teaching and supervision)
- Risk of romantic relationships and heartbreak
- Risk of making decisions you disagree with
- Risk of failing at things that matter to them
- Risk of facing adult-level challenges

If you protect them from age-appropriate risks, they won't develop the skills needed for the next level.

Teaching Safety Skills Instead of Constant Supervision

Rather than hovering constantly, teach them to protect themselves.

Safety Skills to Teach

Physical safety:

- How to cross streets safely
- How to swim/water safety
- How to recognize dangerous situations
- When to call 911
- How to get help if lost
- Basic first aid (age-appropriate)

Personal safety:

- Body autonomy and consent
- How to recognize inappropriate adult behavior
- That they can say "no" to adults
- Who to tell if someone makes them uncomfortable
- What to do if separated from parents in public

Digital safety:

- What to share/not share online
- How to recognize predators online
- Privacy settings
- What to do if something uncomfortable happens online
- How to protect personal information

Emotional safety:

- How to recognize unhealthy relationships
- How to set boundaries
- How to trust their instincts
- How to ask for help when needed

Once you've taught these skills, trust them to use them.

The Transition from Supervision to Trust**The progression:**

Stage 1: I do, you watch You demonstrate the skill while they observe. "Watch how I cross the street. I look both ways. I wait for cars. I walk, not run."

Stage 2: We do together You do it together while providing guidance. "Let's cross together. You tell me what we should do first. That's right, look both ways."

Stage 3: You do, I supervise closely They do it while you watch and give immediate feedback. "Good job looking both ways. Remember to watch for turning cars too."

Stage 4: You do, I observe from distance They do it with increasing independence while you watch from farther away. "I'll watch from here while you cross to that store."

Stage 5: You do independently They do it completely on their own. "You can walk to your friend's house. You know the safety rules."

This progression builds competence and confidence.

When They Violate Safety Rules

If they demonstrate they can't follow safety rules:

Don't: Hover more closely or never give them independence again.

Do:

1. Discuss what happened
2. Review the safety rules
3. Give them another chance to demonstrate responsibility
4. If needed, temporarily reduce independence until they show they can handle it

"You didn't look both ways when crossing. That's dangerous. We're going to go back to Stage 3 (me supervising closely) for a while. When you show me you can follow the rules consistently, we'll move back to more independence."

Identifying Your Triggers for Over-Protection

Understanding what triggers your over-protective responses helps you interrupt the pattern.

Common Triggers

1. Your own childhood trauma

If you experienced:

- Abuse or neglect
- A significant accident or injury
- Loss of a parent or sibling
- Kidnapping or assault fears

You might over-protect to prevent your child from experiencing what you experienced.

2. Something you read or heard

One news story about a child being hurt can trigger weeks of over-protection, even though the statistical risk hasn't changed.

3. Another parent's judgment

"What will other parents think if I let my child do this?" can drive over-protection.

4. Your child's previous injury/difficulty

One bad experience (they got hurt, they were bullied) can trigger persistent over-protection long after the situation resolved.

5. Loss of control in other areas of life

When life feels chaotic, you might over-control your child as a way to feel in control of something.

6. Your own anxiety disorder

Generalized anxiety, OCD, or PTSD can manifest as over-protective parenting.

Trigger Identification Exercise

For one week, track situations where you feel the urge to over-protect:

Date/Time: _____

Situation: (What was happening)

My response: (What I wanted to do or did do)

Physical sensations: (Heart racing? Tense? Panicky?)

Thoughts: (What was I imagining would happen?)

Underlying fear: (What was I really afraid of?)

Historical connection: (Does this connect to my past?)

Example:

Date/Time: Tuesday 3 PM

Situation: 10-year-old son wanted to bike to friend's house

My response: Said no, offered to drive him

Physical sensations: Heart racing, felt panicky

Thoughts: "What if he gets hit by a car? What if he gets lost? What if something happens?"

Underlying fear: Something terrible will happen and it will be my fault

Historical connection: My brother was hit by a car when I was 10

Seeing this pattern helps you recognize: "My fear is about my past, not about the actual risk my son faces today."

Working with Your Triggers

1. Acknowledge them "I'm being triggered by my past trauma. This fear is about me, not about my child's actual safety."

2. Assess reality "What's the actual risk? Not my worst-case fear, but the realistic probability?"

3. Get support "I need to process this fear in therapy, not act it out in my parenting."

4. Make the wise choice despite the trigger "Even though I'm scared, I'm going to let him bike to his friend's house because it's age-appropriate and he knows the safety rules."

5. Manage your anxiety "I'm going to feel anxious while he's gone. That's okay. I'll use my coping strategies rather than rescuing him."

Creating a "Letting Go" Plan

Breaking patterns of over-functioning requires intentional, planned release. Here's how to create a letting-go plan.

Step 1: Identify Current Over-Functioning

Where are you currently over-functioning?

List areas where you:

- Do things they could do themselves
- Hover when they don't need supervision
- Prevent challenges they could handle
- Make decisions they could make
- Protect them from appropriate risks

Be specific:

- "I pack their lunch every day even though they're 12"
- "I check their homework every night even though they're in high school"
- "I won't let them walk to school even though it's safe and they're 10"
- "I solve all their friend conflicts"

Step 2: Categorize by Priority

Which areas are most important to release first?

Consider:

- What's most age-inappropriate (biggest gap between their age and your involvement)
- What would have the biggest positive impact on their development
- What's causing the most conflict/resentment
- What you're most ready to release

Rank them: High priority, Medium priority, Low priority

Step 3: Create Specific Release Plans

For each area, create a graduated plan:

Example: Stop doing their laundry (child is 11)

Month 1:

- Teach them how to do laundry
- Do it together several times
- Let them do a load while you supervise

Month 2:

- They do their own laundry with you checking that it's done
- You offer help if asked but don't take over

Month 3:

- Full responsibility
- Natural consequences if they don't do it (no clean clothes)

Example: Stop hovering at playground (child is 6)

Week 1:

- Stand 10 feet away instead of right next to them
- Resist urge to intervene unless actual danger

Week 2:

- Sit on a bench where you can see them
- Only intervene for genuine danger

Week 3:

- Sit on bench and look at phone occasionally (still aware)
- Trust them to navigate challenges

Week 4:

- Normal parent supervision (generally aware, not hovering)

Step 4: Prepare Them**Don't just suddenly release without preparation:**

"I've been doing [X] for you, but you're old enough to handle this yourself now. Let me teach you how, and then you'll be responsible for it."

"I've been hovering too much at the playground. I'm going to give you more space because I trust you to be safe. You know the rules. I'll be nearby if you need me."

Step 5: Manage Your Anxiety**Prepare for the anxiety you'll feel:**

- Journal about your fears
- Process with a therapist or trusted friend
- Use anxiety management techniques (breathing, grounding)
- Remind yourself why you're doing this
- Tolerate the discomfort as an investment in their growth

Step 6: Resist the Urge to Take Back Control**When you feel anxious or when they struggle:**

- Pause before intervening
- Ask: "Is this dangerous or just uncomfortable for me to watch?"
- Remind yourself: "I'm building their capability by not rescuing"
- Breathe through the anxiety
- Trust the process

Step 7: Celebrate Milestones

When they successfully handle something you've released:

- Acknowledge it: "You've been managing your laundry really well!"
- Express confidence: "I'm proud of how responsible you've become"
- Note growth: "Remember when this seemed hard? Look at you now!"

Step 8: Adjust as Needed

Some releases might need adjustment:

If they're truly not ready: "I see you're not quite ready for this level of independence yet. Let's go back to doing this together for a while, and we'll try again in a month."

If you moved too fast: "I think I released too much too quickly. Let me provide a bit more structure while you build these skills."

The goal is gradual release based on demonstrated capability, not rigid timeline.

The Lighthouse in Practice: Real Scenarios

Let's look at specific scenarios and how lighthouse parenting handles them compared to helicopter/bulldozer parenting.

Scenario 1: Child Wants to Walk to School (Age 9)

Helicopter response: "Absolutely not! It's too dangerous! I'll drive you every day. I can't risk something happening to you."

Bulldozer response: "I'll call the school and demand they provide better crossing guards. I'll petition the city for more safety measures. I'll organize parent patrols."

Lighthouse response: "Let's assess whether this is safe. The route is [distance], there are sidewalks, and you'd walk with friends. Let's practice the route together this week. I'll teach you the safety rules. Then we'll start with me following in the car for a week, then watching from a distance, then full independence. If you show me you can follow the rules, you can walk to school."

Scenario 2: Teen Wants to Go to Party (Age 15)

Helicopter response: "Who's going to be there? Will parents be home? What time does it start and end? Can I talk to the host parents? I need to know every detail. Actually, I'll just drop you off and pick you up, and I want texts every hour."

Bulldozer response: "I'll call the parents ahead and make sure everything is arranged exactly how I want it. I'll clear any potential problems."

Lighthouse response: "Tell me about the party. Who's hosting? Will parents be home? What's the plan? Here are the rules: No alcohol, no drugs, home by midnight, text me when you arrive and when you're ready to be picked up. If anything makes you uncomfortable or unsafe, call me immediately and I'll come get you with no questions asked until we get home. I trust you to make good choices."

Scenario 3: Child Struggling with Homework (Age 10)

Helicopter response: Sit with them the entire time, correcting every error, essentially doing it for them so it's perfect.

Bulldozer response: Email the teacher asking for an extension, complain that the homework is too hard, do significant portions of the work yourself.

Lighthouse response: "You're working on homework. I'm available if you have questions. If you're stuck, I can help you understand the concept, but you

need to do the work. If it's not done, you'll turn in whatever you have and explain to your teacher why. What you turn in is your responsibility."

Scenario 4: Child Rejected by Friend Group (Age 12)

Helicopter response: Call all the parents, try to force the friendships to continue, make the child your constant companion to ease the pain.

Bulldozer response: Call the school to intervene, talk to the other kids yourself, try to engineer new friendships.

Lighthouse response: "I know this hurts. Being excluded is really painful. Let's talk about what happened. What do you think you want to do? Do you want to try to repair these friendships, or find new friends? I'm here to talk through your options and support you emotionally. This is hard, but you can get through it."

Scenario 5: Teen Got Bad Grade (Age 16)

Helicopter response: Email teacher immediately, demand a retake, supervise all studying from now on, make them quit activities to focus on grades.

Bulldozer response: Email teacher and principal to complain about unfair grading, demand special accommodations, do the work for them to ensure future success.

Lighthouse response: "You got a D on this test. What happened? Did you study? Do you understand the material? What's your plan for the next test? I'm here if you need help understanding concepts, but your grades are your responsibility. What will you do differently?"

Notice the pattern: Lighthouse parents provide guidance, teach skills, and trust the child to navigate with support, not control.

The Freedom of Letting Go

Let me end with a vision of what freedom looks like—for both you and your child.

For Your Child

When you release appropriate control, your child experiences:

- Confidence: "I can handle challenges"
- Competence: "I've developed real skills"
- Resilience: "I've faced difficulties and survived"
- Trust in themselves: "I can make good decisions"
- Pride: "I did this myself"
- Preparedness: "I know how to navigate the world"
- Healthy relationship with you: "My parent believes in me"

For You

When you release appropriate control, you experience:

- Freedom from constant vigilance and anxiety
- Pride in their growing capability
- Deeper relationship (not based on their dependence)
- Confidence that you've prepared them well
- Ability to enjoy them rather than managing them
- Peace that comes from trusting God with their journey
- Time and energy for your own life

The Both/And

You can be:

- Protective AND releasing
- Available AND not hovering
- Concerned AND trusting

- Vigilant about real danger AND permissive of appropriate risk
- A steady presence AND not controlling

This is lighthouse parenting: Visible, available, guiding—but not hovering or bulldozing.

The Long-Term Impact

20 years from now:

Your child is navigating adult life competently. They make good decisions not because you're controlling their choices, but because you taught them how to think through choices. They call you for advice sometimes, not because they need you to make their decisions, but because they value your perspective. They've faced challenges, made mistakes, and learned to recover. They're resilient, capable, and confident.

And you can rest, knowing you prepared them for the path rather than trying to clear the path for them.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- Healthy protection looks like safety, not control; it's about genuine danger, not discomfort
- Helicopter parents hover constantly; bulldozer parents clear all obstacles; lighthouse parents provide steady guidance while releasing control
- Most situations that feel dangerous are actually growth opportunities; distinguish real danger from perceived danger based on anxiety
- Your job is to prepare them for the path, not clear the path for them
- Anxiety is a poor parenting guide; parent from wisdom, not fear

- Graduated exposure to age-appropriate challenges builds capability over time
- Teaching safety skills and then trusting them is more effective than constant supervision

Remember: Your job is to prepare them for the path, not clear the path for them. Protection is about genuine safety from real danger. Everything else is an opportunity for growth. Your anxiety is not a reliable indicator of danger.

Action Steps This Week:

1. Identify your parenting style—helicopter, bulldozer, or lighthouse—and commit to change if needed
2. Choose one area where you over-function and create a graduated release plan
3. Practice the risk assessment framework for one situation this week
4. Identify your top three triggers for over-protection and how they connect to your past
5. Let your child do one thing that makes you anxious but is actually safe

Reflection Questions:

1. Which parenting style (helicopter, bulldozer, lighthouse) most describes you? What drives that pattern?
2. What are you currently "protecting" your child from that's actually a growth opportunity?
3. How does your own anxiety drive your parenting decisions? What fears are really about your past, not their present?
4. What would it look like to prepare rather than prevent in one specific area of your child's life?

5. What would you gain—and what would your child gain—if you released appropriate control?
 6. What's one thing you could let go of this week that would build your child's capability?
-

Prayer for Finding Balance:

Father, I'm afraid. I want to protect my children from everything, but I know that's not Your way. You protect us from real danger, but You allow us to face challenges that grow us. Teach me to do the same. Give me wisdom to know the difference between real danger and my own anxiety. Help me see that most of what scares me isn't actually dangerous—it's just uncomfortable for me to watch. Give me courage to step back, to let them climb, to let them struggle, to let them try. When my hands want to hover and catch them before they fall, remind me that small falls teach them how to get back up. When my heart races with anxiety, help me breathe and trust You. You love them more than I do. You're with them when I'm not. You're sovereign over their lives. Help me prepare them for the path rather than trying to clear the path for them. Give me the strength to be a lighthouse—visible, available, steady—but not controlling. Teach me to guide without hovering, to protect without over-functioning, to love without smothering. And Father, heal my own fears and traumas so I don't project them onto my children. Help me parent from wisdom, not from anxiety. In Jesus' name, Amen.

*"The Lord will protect you from all evil; He will keep your soul. The Lord will guard your going out and your coming in from this time forth and forever."
—Psalm 121:7-8 (NASB)*

*"For the Lord gives wisdom; from His mouth come knowledge and understanding. He stores up sound wisdom for the upright; He is a shield to those who walk in integrity."
—Proverbs 2:6-7 (NASB)*

"Do not fear, for I am with you; do not anxiously look about you, for I am your God. I will strengthen you, surely I will help you, surely I will uphold you with My righteous right hand."

—Isaiah 41:10 (NASB)

CHAPTER 12

When Your Child Has Special Needs: Avoiding Co-Dependency in Exceptional Circumstances

"For You formed my inward parts; You wove me in my mother's womb. I will give thanks to You, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made; wonderful are Your works, and my soul knows it very well."

—Psalm 139:13-14 (NASB)

Catherine sat in the support group for parents of children with disabilities, listening to a mother describe her 16-year-old daughter with cerebral palsy.

"I do everything for her," the woman said. "I feed her, dress her, make all her decisions. I speak for her. I can't imagine her being without me. What would happen to her? She needs me."

The facilitator asked gently, "Can she do any of those things herself, with support or adaptive equipment?"

The mother paused. "Well... maybe some things. But it's so much work to teach her. It's easier to just do it. And she's been through so much already. I don't want her to struggle more than she has to."

Catherine felt a chill run through her. She recognized herself in this woman's words.

Her own son, 12-year-old Ethan, had autism and ADHD. He was verbal, capable in many ways, but struggled with executive function, social interactions, and sensory processing. And Catherine had been doing everything for him—managing his schedule, speaking for him in social situations, making all his decisions, organizing his life completely.

She told herself it was necessary. He needed the support. He couldn't do these things alone.

But sitting in that support group, she realized: *I've been confusing necessary support with total control. I've been doing things FOR him that I could be teaching him to do WITH support. I've made him completely dependent on me—and I've made myself completely dependent on being needed.*

The facilitator's next words hit her: "There's a difference between providing the support your child needs and preventing them from developing whatever independence is possible for them. When we do everything for them—even things they could potentially learn to do—we're not protecting them. We're limiting them."

Catherine went home that night and watched Ethan. Really watched him.

She saw a capable boy who had never been given the chance to try things because she always jumped in. A smart kid who could communicate but didn't because she spoke for him. A young man who could have learned more independence but hadn't because she'd wrapped him in cotton wool.

And she realized: *My fear of him struggling has prevented him from growing. My need to be needed has kept him dependent. My love has accidentally limited him.*

She cried that night—for the opportunities she'd missed to help him grow, for the dependence she'd created, for the co-dependent patterns she'd developed even in a situation that seemed to justify them.

But then she made a decision: Starting tomorrow, things would change. She would still provide the support he needed. But she would also start believing in his capability to grow.

This chapter addresses one of the most complex situations in parenting: **how to avoid co-dependent patterns when your child genuinely needs significant, ongoing support due to disabilities, chronic illness, learning differences, or mental health challenges.**

This is delicate territory. The line between necessary care and co-dependent enmeshment is harder to see when your child truly needs more support than typical children. And yet, co-dependent patterns can develop even—perhaps especially—in these circumstances.

This chapter is not saying:

- Your child doesn't need support
- You should treat them like they don't have special needs
- You're wrong for providing care
- You should abandon them to struggle

This chapter IS saying:

- Even children with significant needs can develop whatever independence is possible for them
- Necessary care is different from enmeshment
- You can advocate without over-functioning
- Your child's limitations don't erase your need for boundaries and self-care
- Maximum independence (for their capabilities) is still the goal

Let's navigate this together with compassion, wisdom, and hope.

The Unique Challenges of Parenting Children with Special Needs

Before we address co-dependency, let's acknowledge the very real, very significant challenges you face that parents of typically-developing children don't.

What Makes This Different

Parents of children with special needs face:

1. Ongoing, intensive caregiving needs Not just the usual parenting, but medical care, therapy coordination, advocacy, specialized teaching, physical assistance—often well beyond typical parenting demands.

2. Extended dependency Your child may need support far longer than 18 years—possibly their entire life.

3. Grief and loss Grief over the child you expected, the experiences they won't have, the milestones they won't reach, the future that's different than you imagined.

4. Constant advocacy Fighting for services, accommodations, inclusion, appropriate education, medical care. Navigating systems that are often inadequate or resistant.

5. Financial strain Medical expenses, therapy costs, equipment, lost work income, specialized care—the financial burden can be enormous.

6. Social isolation Friends who don't understand, family who judge or withdraw, activities your family can't participate in, feeling alone in the struggle.

7. Uncertainty about the future What will happen when you can't care for them anymore? Who will? Will they be safe? Loved? Cared for properly?

8. Judgment from others People who think you're too protective or not protective enough, who question your choices, who blame you for your child's struggles.

9. Exhaustion Physical, emotional, mental, spiritual exhaustion from the relentless demands.

10. Complex emotions Love, fear, frustration, guilt, resentment, joy, sorrow, pride, grief—all at once, all the time.

I see you. This is hard. This is really, really hard.

Why Co-Dependency Is More Likely

Given these challenges, co-dependent patterns are especially likely because:

1. The lines are genuinely blurred When your child truly needs more support, it's harder to know where necessary care ends and over-functioning begins.

2. Your role is more intensive You're doing more for them out of genuine necessity, which can slide into doing everything even when you don't need to.

3. Society reinforces it People expect you to be completely self-sacrificing, available 24/7, with no needs of your own. The "special needs parent martyr" is praised.

4. Guilt is powerful "If I don't do everything possible, I'm failing my child." This guilt drives you to do more than is healthy or helpful.

5. Your identity becomes fused "Special needs parent" becomes your entire identity, not just part of who you are.

6. Their needs feel like emergencies Every need feels urgent and critical, making it hard to maintain boundaries.

7. You're exhausted When you're depleted, it's easier to fall into unhealthy patterns because you don't have energy to do things differently.

But even given all this—maybe especially because of all this—it's crucial to recognize when care crosses into co-dependency.

Necessary Care vs. Co-Dependency

Necessary care is:

- Providing support they genuinely cannot provide themselves
- Advocating for services and accommodations they need
- Teaching them skills within their capability
- Coordinating medical/therapeutic care
- Ensuring their safety and wellbeing
- Adapting the environment to their needs

Co-dependency is:

- Doing things for them they could do themselves (with support or adaptation)
- Speaking for them when they could speak for themselves
- Making all decisions without their input
- Preventing them from trying things because they might struggle
- Making your entire identity about their needs
- Having no life separate from their care
- Using their needs to avoid addressing your own issues
- Creating dependence beyond what's necessary

The question is never: "Do they need support?" (Yes, they do.)

The question is: "Am I providing the support they need, or am I over-functioning in ways that prevent their maximum possible independence?"

Advocacy vs. Over-Functioning—Where's the Line?

Advocacy is necessary. Your child needs you to fight for them in systems that often fail them. But advocacy can slide into over-functioning if you're not careful.

What Advocacy Looks Like

Healthy advocacy:

- Fighting for appropriate services and accommodations
- Ensuring their rights are protected
- Navigating systems on their behalf (when they can't)
- Teaching them to advocate for themselves (when possible)
- Requesting reasonable modifications
- Holding providers accountable

- Educating others about their needs
- Being their voice when they don't have one

This is necessary. This is loving. This is appropriate.

What Over-Functioning Looks Like

Over-functioning disguised as advocacy:

- Fighting battles they could fight themselves (with support)
- Demanding special treatment beyond reasonable accommodation
- Speaking over them when they could speak for themselves
- Not allowing them to experience natural consequences
- Expecting everyone to change for your child without your child learning any adaptation
- Being combative when collaboration would work
- Making everything a fight even when it doesn't need to be
- Refusing to let them fail at anything

The Distinction

Advocacy says: "My child needs X accommodation to have equal access. I'm fighting to ensure they get it."

Over-functioning says: "Everyone should adapt to my child. My child shouldn't have to adapt to anything. I'll make sure they never experience any difficulty."

Advocacy says: "My child needs support to communicate. I'll ensure they have AAC devices, teach people to give them time to communicate, and advocate for patience and understanding."

Over-functioning says: "I'll speak for my child in every situation even though they can communicate. It's easier and faster."

Advocacy says: "My child needs modified assignments that still teach the learning objective. I'm working with the school to create appropriate accommodations."

Over-functioning says: "My child shouldn't have to do work that's hard. I'll demand all work be eliminated or made so easy they don't struggle."

Teaching Them to Advocate for Themselves

If your child has the capacity (verbal, cognitive, emotional) to learn self-advocacy, this is crucial:

Start young and build gradually:

Elementary age (if developmentally appropriate):

- Teaching them to name their needs: "I need a break." "This is too loud." "I need help with this."
- Practicing with you: "Tell the teacher you need help."
- Role-playing: "What would you say if someone teases you?"

Middle school:

- More direct self-advocacy: "I have an IEP. Can I use my accommodations?"
- Attending parts of IEP meetings
- Learning about their diagnosis and what they need

High school:

- Full participation in IEP meetings
- Self-advocacy in school and community
- Understanding their rights
- Planning for their future

Adult:

- Full self-advocacy (with support if needed)
- Making their own decisions
- Speaking for themselves

If your child cannot develop full self-advocacy due to their disability, you remain their voice. But even then, presume competence and involve them as much as possible.

The Balance

Ask yourself:

- Am I fighting for necessary accommodations, or demanding preferential treatment?
- Am I speaking for my child because they can't, or because it's easier?
- Am I teaching them to advocate for themselves where possible?
- Am I collaborating with providers, or constantly in combat mode?
- Am I advocating for access and inclusion, or trying to change everything to eliminate all difficulty?

You can be a fierce advocate while also teaching maximum independence and appropriate adaptation.

Fostering Maximum Independence Within Their Capabilities

This is perhaps the most important principle in this chapter: **Every child—regardless of disability—has some capacity for independence. The goal is to develop whatever independence is possible, not to keep them dependent.**

Presuming Competence

There's a principle in disability advocacy called "presuming competence"—assuming that people have capacity and potential even when it's not immediately obvious.

This doesn't mean:

- Pretending disability doesn't exist
- Expecting them to do things they truly can't do
- Ignoring their genuine limitations

It means:

- Starting from belief in their potential
- Looking for ways to help them do things, not assuming they can't
- Not limiting them based on your assumptions about their limitations
- Giving them opportunities to surprise you

The opposite—presuming incompetence—leads to learned helplessness and unnecessary dependence.

The Dangerous Comfort of Dependence

Here's a painful truth: Sometimes, parents unconsciously keep children with special needs dependent because:

- 1. It feels like love** "I'm taking care of them. I'm being a good parent."
- 2. It gives you purpose** When your entire identity is wrapped up in being their caregiver, their independence threatens your identity.
- 3. It's easier than teaching** Teaching independence is hard, time-consuming work. Doing things for them is faster.
- 4. It feels safer** If they're dependent on you, you know they're safe. Independence feels risky.
- 5. It manages your anxiety** Controlling their life manages your fear about their vulnerability.

But making them unnecessarily dependent doesn't protect them. It limits them.

Building Skills, Not Doing Everything

The framework:

For every task, ask:

1. Can they do this independently? → Let them
2. Can they do this with minimal support? → Provide minimal support
3. Can they do this with significant support? → Provide significant support
4. Can they do this with adaptive equipment/technology? → Get the equipment
5. Can they do a modified version? → Modify it
6. Can they learn to do this with teaching? → Teach them
7. Is this genuinely beyond their capability? → You do it

Start at #1 and work down. Don't start at #7.

Examples by Area

Self-care:

For a child with physical disabilities:

- Can they feed themselves with adapted utensils?
- Can they dress themselves with modified clothing (velcro instead of buttons)?
- Can they bathe with grab bars and a shower chair?
- Can they communicate when they need toileting assistance?

Don't assume: "They have a physical disability, so I must do everything." Find adaptations that maximize their independence.

For a child with intellectual disabilities:

- Can they brush their teeth with a picture schedule?

- Can they choose their clothes with limited options?
- Can they help with dressing even if they can't do it independently?
- Can they learn hygiene routines with repetition and visual cues?

Household skills:

For a child with autism:

- Can they do chores with visual checklists?
- Can they follow a schedule with visual supports?
- Can they learn routines with consistency and repetition?
- Can they participate in meal prep with accommodations?

For a child with learning disabilities:

- Can they do chores without written instructions?
- Can they learn through demonstration rather than verbal instruction?
- Can they build skills through practice even if it takes longer?

Social skills:

For a child with social anxiety or autism:

- Can they practice social situations through role-play?
- Can they learn scripts for common interactions?
- Can they develop friendships with support?
- Can they communicate their needs even if differently than neurotypical peers?

Academic/cognitive skills:

For a child with learning disabilities:

- Can they learn through different methods?

- Can they access content through audiobooks, visual aids, or hands-on learning?
- Can they demonstrate knowledge differently than traditional tests?

The "Challenge Zone"

There's a zone where growth happens:

Too easy: No learning, unnecessary dependence **Just right:** Challenging but achievable with support **Too hard:** Overwhelming, genuinely beyond capability

Your job: Keep them in the "just right" challenge zone.

This requires:

- Knowing their capabilities
- Adjusting as they grow
- Not protecting them from challenge
- Celebrating effort and growth

Starting Where They Are

If you've been over-functioning, you can start fostering independence now:

Step 1: Assess honestly "What am I currently doing for my child that they might be able to do themselves (with support, adaptation, or teaching)?"

Step 2: Pick one area Don't try to change everything at once. Choose one skill to work on.

Step 3: Break it down What are the component steps? Which steps could they learn first?

Step 4: Teach systematically Use whatever teaching method works for your child:

- Visual supports

- Repetition
- Hand-over-hand guidance
- Video modeling
- Social stories
- Task analysis
- Behavioral techniques

Step 5: Celebrate progress Every small step toward independence is worth celebrating.

Step 6: Move to the next skill Build gradually. Over months and years, significant independence can develop.

When Independence Isn't Possible

For some children with profound disabilities, independent living may never be possible. This is reality. But even then:

- They can have choice within their capabilities
- They can communicate preferences
- They can participate in their own care as much as possible
- They can be treated with dignity and respect
- They can have the most independence that IS possible for them

Maximum independence within their capabilities is still the goal.

Caring for Yourself While Caring for a High-Needs Child

You cannot sustainably care for your child if you completely neglect yourself. This isn't selfish—it's necessary.

Why Self-Care Is Especially Hard

1. Time Your child's needs are time-intensive. Where do you find time for yourself?

2. Guilt "How can I take care of myself when my child needs so much?"

3. Exhaustion You're too tired to do anything for yourself.

4. Judgment People criticize: "She's at the salon while her child is..."

5. Limited options Regular childcare won't work. You need specialized respite care.

6. Identity If you're not "special needs parent," who are you?

But neglecting yourself leads to:

- Burnout
- Resentment (even toward your child)
- Depression and anxiety
- Physical health problems
- Inability to provide good care
- Co-dependent enmeshment (because you have nothing else)

Self-Care Is Not Optional

Scripture is clear:

"And He said to him, 'You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind.' This is the great and foremost commandment. The second is like it, 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.'"

—Matthew 22:37-39 (NASB)

Notice: Love your neighbor **as yourself**. Not **instead of** yourself.

You're modeling for your child (and other children if you have them) what it means to have a life, to care for yourself, to have boundaries. If you have nothing in your life except their needs, you're teaching them that's normal—and it's not.

Practical Self-Care

1. Respite care without guilt

Respite care is temporary relief—someone else caring for your child so you can rest.

You need this.

"But I feel guilty leaving them. What if something goes wrong? What if they need me?"

Listen: If something happens to you—if you burn out, get sick, or become unable to care for them—what happens to your child? Your wellbeing is directly connected to their wellbeing.

Types of respite:

- Regular breaks (a few hours weekly)
- Occasional day/overnight respite
- Emergency respite when you're sick
- Planned respite for vacation

How to arrange:

- State disability services
- Church or community volunteers
- Hired caregivers trained in special needs
- Other special needs families trading respite
- Family members (if willing and capable)

2. Maintain other relationships

Don't lose all friendships because you're consumed by caregiving.

- Keep in touch with friends
- Have adult conversations

- Do things with your spouse (if applicable) that aren't about your child
- Connect with other special needs parents who understand

3. Have something that's yours

A hobby, interest, work, volunteer role, church involvement—something that's not about being a special needs parent.

This isn't selfish. It's healthy.

4. Physical health

- Regular sleep (as much as possible)
- Eating well
- Exercise (even 15 minutes)
- Medical care for yourself
- Managing your own health conditions

5. Mental/emotional health

- Therapy (especially important)
- Support groups
- Stress management
- Processing grief
- Treating your own anxiety/depression

6. Spiritual health

- Prayer
- Scripture
- Worship
- Christian community

- Remembering God's sovereignty and goodness

"But I Don't Have Time"

If you don't make time for self-care now, you'll be forced to make time for breakdown later.

Burnout, illness, mental health crisis, relationship collapse—these WILL happen if you don't care for yourself.

Start small:

- 15 minutes of something you enjoy
- One hour of respite per week
- One friend coffee date per month
- One evening with your spouse
- One thing that's just yours

Build from there.

Permission Statement

You are allowed to:

- Need breaks
- Feel overwhelmed
- Want time away from your child
- Have needs of your own
- Not be available 24/7
- Do things for yourself
- Have a life beyond caregiving

This doesn't mean you love your child less. It means you're human.

"But He said to me, 'My grace is sufficient for you, for power is perfected in weakness.' Most gladly, therefore, I will rather boast about my weaknesses, so that the power of Christ may dwell in me."

—2 Corinthians 12:9 (NASB)

You are weak. You need help. You need rest. This is not failure—it's being human. God's power is perfected in your weakness when you acknowledge your limits and seek support.

Siblings and Family Balance

Children with special needs don't exist in isolation. They have siblings, extended family, and a family system that all need consideration.

The Impact on Siblings

Siblings of children with special needs often experience:

- 1. Less parental attention** The special needs child requires more time, energy, and focus. Siblings notice.
- 2. More responsibility** They're asked to help more, be more mature, be more independent earlier.
- 3. Resentment and guilt** They resent the inequality but feel guilty for resenting. They love their sibling but also feel angry or jealous.
- 4. Pressure to be "the good kid"** They learn not to have needs, problems, or demands because their parents are already overwhelmed.
- 5. Embarrassment** They might be embarrassed by their sibling's behavior or how others treat their family.
- 6. Worry about the future** What will happen to their sibling? Will they be responsible for them someday?
- 7. Maturity and compassion** Many siblings of children with special needs develop deep compassion, maturity, and advocacy skills.

The experience is complex—both burden and gift.

Avoiding Co-Dependent Patterns With Siblings

Don't:

- Make them little caretakers
- Expect them to have no needs because "your brother/sister needs more"
- Ignore their resentment or tell them they shouldn't feel it
- Make their whole life about their sibling
- Give them no attention because you're consumed with the special needs child
- Expect them to always understand and never complain

Do:

- Give them individual attention regularly
- Let them have their own activities, interests, and time
- Validate their complicated feelings without judgment
- Give them age-appropriate information about their sibling's condition
- Let them be kids, not caretakers
- Set boundaries: "You can help sometimes, but you're not responsible for your sibling"
- Talk about their feelings openly
- Get them support if needed (therapy, sibling support groups)

Individual Time

This is crucial: Each child needs regular, individual time with parents where the focus is completely on them, not on their sibling's needs.

Schedule it:

- Weekly one-on-one time with each child
- Special outings just for them
- Bedtime routines that include focused attention
- Interest in their activities, friends, life

During this time:

- No talking about the special needs sibling
- No phone interruptions
- Full attention on this child
- Celebrating who they are

Family Balance

Your family cannot revolve entirely around the special needs child, even though their needs are significant.

Protect:

- Family dinners (adapted as needed)
- Family activities everyone can participate in
- Celebrations for all children
- Traditions
- Time together that isn't therapy or medical appointments

Make decisions considering the whole family: "This therapy would be good for [special needs child], but it would require [siblings] to spend every afternoon in waiting rooms. Is this the best choice for our family as a whole?"

Sometimes the answer is yes. Sometimes it's no. But consider everyone.

When It's Unbalanced

If you realize your family has become entirely about one child's needs:

1. Acknowledge it "I've made our family life all about [special needs child]. That's not fair to the rest of you."

2. Make changes Start protecting some family time and sibling time.

3. Include siblings in discussion "What would make things better for you?"

4. Set boundaries "We're going to limit therapy to these days so we have family time."

5. Celebrate all children Make sure every child's achievements, interests, and needs get attention.

Preparing for Their Future

One of the most anxiety-producing aspects of parenting a child with special needs: **What happens to them when I'm gone?**

Planning for Adult Life

The preparation should start early and include:

1. Developing maximum independence Whatever they can do, teach them to do. The more independent they are, the more options they'll have.

2. Building support networks beyond you

- Extended family relationships
- Friendships
- Community connections
- Church involvement
- Support services
- Future caregivers

Don't let them be dependent solely on you. Build a web of support.

3. Legal and financial planning

- Guardianship (if needed)

- Special needs trusts
- Government benefits (SSI, Medicaid)
- Letter of intent (instructions for future caregivers)
- Estate planning
- Financial planning for their lifetime care

Get professional help with this. It's complex.

4. Exploring residential options

- Can they live independently with supports?
- Group homes?
- Supported living?
- Living with family?

Research options in your area. Visit facilities. Plan ahead.

5. Teaching life skills systematically Make a list of skills needed for maximum independence and work on them intentionally over years.

6. Vocational planning

- What work could they do?
- What training is available?
- What supports exist?
- What interests and abilities do they have?

7. Social relationships

- How can they maintain friendships as adults?
- Are there social groups for adults with disabilities?
- What recreational opportunities exist?

Letting Go (Appropriate to Their Capability)

Even if your child will always need support, letting go is still necessary:

For some adults with disabilities:

- They'll live independently
- Make their own choices
- Have their own lives
- May have romantic relationships, marriage, possibly children
- Work and contribute to community

Your job: Prepare them and release them to adult life with appropriate support.

For adults with more significant disabilities:

- They may always need support
- But they still transition to adult life
- Adult programs, not school
- Adult relationships, not childhood ones
- Age-appropriate activities and expectations
- As much choice and independence as possible

Even when they need lifelong care, the parent-child relationship needs to shift to reflect their adulthood.

Your Deepest Fear

"What happens when I'm gone?"

This fear keeps special needs parents awake at night.

The honest answer: You don't know exactly. But you can:

- Plan as well as possible

- Build support networks
- Create legal protections
- Train others in their care
- Trust that others can love them too
- Ultimately trust God, who loves them even more than you do

And here's a hard truth: If you've made them entirely dependent on you, you've made the transition after your death/incapacity even harder for them. Maximum independence—whatever that means for them—protects them for the future.

Special Needs Require Special Care, Not Co-Dependent Enmeshment

Let me be absolutely clear: **Your child's special needs require special care, attention, support, and advocacy. This is not co-dependency. This is appropriate parenting.**

But:

Special care can slide into co-dependent enmeshment if:

- You do everything for them, even things they could do
- You speak for them when they could speak for themselves
- You make their needs the only thing that matters in the family
- You have no identity, life, or relationships separate from their care
- You unconsciously keep them dependent beyond necessity
- You refuse all support because "no one can care for them like I do"
- You sacrifice your health, your marriage, your other children, your wellbeing completely

The balance:

- Provide the support they genuinely need

- Foster the independence they're capable of
- Care for yourself so you can sustain caregiving
- Include the whole family, not just one child
- Build a support network beyond yourself
- Prepare them for their future
- Maintain appropriate boundaries

This is both/and, not either/or:

- Both deeply committed to their care AND having a life beyond caregiving
- Both providing necessary support AND fostering maximum independence
- Both advocating fiercely AND teaching self-advocacy where possible
- Both meeting their needs AND maintaining your own wellbeing
- Both present and engaged AND appropriately boundaried

You're Not Failing If You Need Help

The myth: Good special needs parents do everything themselves, need nothing, sacrifice completely, and never struggle.

The truth: Good special needs parents recognize their limits, ask for help, care for themselves, and build sustainable support systems.

You are not:

- Selfish for needing breaks
- Weak for needing support
- Bad for having other children who need attention
- Wrong for maintaining a marriage
- Failing for acknowledging you can't do everything

You are:

- Human
- Doing hard, important work
- Deserving of support
- Worthy of care
- Loved by God who sees your sacrifice

The Long View**20 years from now:**

Your child is living their best possible life—whatever that looks like for them. They have the maximum independence they're capable of. They have support systems beyond you. They have dignity, choice, and as much autonomy as possible.

And you? You're still here, still involved, still loving them—but not completely consumed. You have your own health. Your marriage (if applicable) survived. Your other children are thriving. You have a life, interests, relationships. You can look back and know: you cared for them appropriately without sacrificing yourself inappropriately.

This is sustainable love. This is healthy care.

"But if any of you lacks wisdom, let him ask of God, who gives to all generously and without reproach, and it will be given to him."

—James 1:5 (NASB)

You need wisdom. Ask for it. God will give it generously.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways**You've learned:**

- Special needs require special care, but care can slide into co-dependent enmeshment if you're not careful
- Advocacy is necessary; over-functioning prevents growth
- Every child has capacity for some independence—the goal is maximum independence within their capabilities
- Presuming competence and teaching skills (rather than doing everything) honors their dignity and potential
- Self-care isn't optional—you can't sustain caregiving without caring for yourself
- Siblings need attention, validation, and their own lives separate from their brother/sister's needs
- Planning for their future includes developing independence, building support networks, and appropriate legal/financial planning

Remember: Special needs require special care, not co-dependent enmeshment. Your child needs your support, not your control. Maximum independence (within their capabilities) is still the goal. You need support, rest, and a life beyond caregiving to sustain this marathon.

Action Steps This Week:

1. Identify one thing you're doing for your child that they might be able to do with support/adaptation
2. Schedule one hour of respite care or self-care this week
3. Plan individual time with each sibling (if applicable)
4. Research one support service you haven't used yet
5. Write down one area where you might be over-functioning and commit to changing it

Reflection Questions:

1. Where is the line between necessary care and co-dependent enmeshment in your situation? Are you on the right side of that line?
2. What are you doing for your child that they might be able to do themselves with support, teaching, or adaptation?
3. When was the last time you took care of yourself? What's preventing you from self-care?
4. How are your other children (if applicable) doing? Are they getting enough attention? Do they feel seen and valued?
5. What are you most afraid of regarding your child's future? How can you plan for that fear?
6. Do you have an identity beyond "special needs parent"? If not, what would you like to develop?

Prayer for Parents of Children with Special Needs:

Father, this is so hard. Harder than anyone who hasn't lived it can understand. Thank You that You see me, that You know the weight I carry, that You understand the sleepless nights and the constant worry. Thank You for my child—fearfully and wonderfully made, precious in Your sight, loved beyond measure. Help me love them well—providing the support they need without creating unnecessary dependence, advocating for them fiercely without over-functioning, caring for them deeply while also caring for myself. Give me wisdom to know the difference between necessary care and co-dependent enmeshment. Show me where I'm doing too much and where I need to do more. Give me strength for this marathon. Surround me with support. Help me build networks of care beyond myself. Give me grace for my other children, my marriage, my own needs. Heal my grief over what will never be while helping me celebrate what is. Give my child the richest, most independent life possible within their capabilities. Guide me in preparing for their future. And

Father, when I'm exhausted and overwhelmed, remind me: You love them even more than I do. You're with them when I can't be. You have good plans for them. Help me trust You with what I cannot control. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"For You formed my inward parts; You wove me in my mother's womb. I will give thanks to You, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made; wonderful are Your works, and my soul knows it very well."

—Psalm 139:13-14 (NASB)

"And He has said to me, 'My grace is sufficient for you, for power is perfected in weakness.' Most gladly, therefore, I will rather boast about my weaknesses, so that the power of Christ may dwell in me."

—2 Corinthians 12:9 (NASB)

"But if any of you lacks wisdom, let him ask of God, who gives to all generously and without reproach, and it will be given to him."

—James 1:5 (NASB)

PART FOUR: YOUR ONGOING JOURNEY

Growing in Freedom Together

CHAPTER 13

The Power of Repair: How to Apologize When You Mess Up

"Therefore, confess your sins to one another, and pray for one another so that you may be healed."

—James 5:16 (NASB)

Marcus sat across from his 14-year-old daughter, Emma, at the kitchen table. His hands were shaking slightly. He'd been rehearsing this conversation in his head for days, ever since his therapist had helped him see how his co-dependent patterns had affected her.

For years, he'd made her responsible for his emotions. When she disappointed him, he'd withdraw affection. When she succeeded, he'd bask in it like it was his own achievement. He'd made her his confidant, sharing details about his marriage problems and financial stress. He'd guilted her when she wanted to spend time with friends instead of him. He'd monitored her every move, read her diary, tracked her location obsessively.

He'd told himself it was love. It was protection. It was being involved.

But his therapist had helped him see: it was co-dependency. It was emotional enmeshment. It was using his daughter to meet needs that should have been met elsewhere.

And Emma had been showing signs of the damage—anxiety, people-pleasing, difficulty setting boundaries, taking responsibility for his moods.

"Emma," he began, his voice unsteady. "I need to talk to you about something important, and I need to apologize to you."

She looked up from her phone, instantly wary. "What did I do?"

"Nothing. You didn't do anything. This is about what I've done." He took a deep breath. "I've been realizing that I haven't been parenting you in a healthy way. I've been making you responsible for my feelings. I've shared things with you about my marriage and my problems that you shouldn't have had to carry. I've made you feel guilty when you wanted to do normal teenage things. I've tracked you and monitored you in ways that were about my anxiety, not your safety. And I can see now that this has hurt you. You're anxious all the time. You worry about my feelings more than your own. You have trouble saying no to people."

Emma's eyes filled with tears. She didn't speak.

"I'm so sorry," Marcus continued. "You're my daughter, not my therapist or my friend or the person responsible for making me feel okay. I put way too much on you. I made you feel like you had to take care of me emotionally, and that's not your job. You should have been free to just be a kid, and I didn't let you do that."

"Why are you telling me this?" Emma asked quietly.

"Because I was wrong. And I want to do better. I want you to know that I'm working on this in therapy. I'm going to stop sharing my adult problems with you. I'm going to work on managing my own anxiety instead of making it your problem. I'm going to give you more appropriate privacy and freedom. And I want you to know—none of this is your fault. You didn't do anything wrong. I did."

Emma was crying now. "I thought it was my job to help you feel better. When you were sad, I thought I had to fix it."

"I know. And that's on me. I taught you that. But it's not true. You're not responsible for my emotions. I am. And from now on, I'm going to show you that."

They sat in silence for a moment. Then Emma asked, "Are you actually going to change? Because you've said you'd change things before."

"That's a fair question," Marcus said. "I am going to change. You're going to see me doing things differently. It's going to be a process—I'll probably mess up sometimes. But yes, I'm committed to changing. And if you see me falling back into old patterns, you can tell me. You have permission to say, 'Dad, you're doing that thing again.'"

Emma nodded slowly. "Okay."

It wasn't a perfect moment. Emma was still hurt. Marcus still had work to do. But something shifted in that conversation. For the first time, Marcus owned his mistakes. He took responsibility. He apologized without expecting anything in return.

And Emma, gradually, over the following months, began to breathe a little easier. She watched her father change. She saw him manage his own emotions. She noticed when he stopped sharing inappropriate information with her. She felt the difference when he gave her space.

The repair had begun.

If you've been reading this book, you've likely realized: **"I've been doing some of these co-dependent things. I've made mistakes. I've hurt my children, even though I was trying to love them."**

This realization is painful. The shame can be overwhelming.

But here's what you need to know: **Your children don't need perfect parents. They need humble parents who own their mistakes and grow.**

This chapter is about the power of repair—how to apologize to your children for co-dependent patterns, how to make amends, and how to move forward in a healthier way. It's about the profound gift you give your children when you model humility, accountability, and change.

You Will Make Mistakes—Perfection Isn't the Goal

Let's start by dismantling the toxic belief that you must be a perfect parent.

The Perfection Trap

Co-dependent parents often fall into one of two extremes when they realize they've made mistakes:

Extreme 1: Denial "I wasn't that bad. Other parents are worse. My kids are fine. I don't need to apologize for anything."

This prevents growth and repair.

Extreme 2: Shame spiral "I've ruined my children. I'm a terrible parent. The damage is permanent. There's no point in even trying to change now. I should just give up."

This also prevents growth and repair—paralyzed by shame, you don't take action.

Neither extreme is helpful. Neither is true.

The Realistic Middle Ground

The truth:

- You have made mistakes (all parents do)
- Some of those mistakes have hurt your children
- Your children are resilient and can heal
- It's not too late to change
- Repair is possible
- Apologizing is powerful
- Changed behavior is healing

The goal is not perfection. The goal is growth, humility, and repair when you mess up.

Biblical Perspective on Mistakes

Scripture is clear: everyone sins. Everyone makes mistakes. No one is perfect.

"For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God."

—Romans 3:23 (NASB)

This includes you as a parent. You have sinned against your children. You've done things that hurt them. You've parented from your wounds rather than from wisdom.

But Scripture is equally clear about what to do when you've sinned:

"He who conceals his transgressions will not prosper, but he who confesses and forsakes them will find compassion."

—Proverbs 28:13 (NASB)

Don't conceal. Confess and forsake.

"Therefore if you are presenting your offering at the altar, and there remember that your brother has something against you, leave your offering there before the altar and go; first be reconciled to your brother, and then come and present your offering."

—Matthew 5:23-24 (NASB)

Before you offer worship to God, be reconciled with the person you've wronged. This includes your children.

Permission to Be Imperfect

You have permission to:

- Make mistakes
- Not have all the answers
- Be a work in progress
- Apologize to your children
- Change course when you realize you were wrong

- Learn and grow
- Be human

Your children benefit more from a humble, growing parent than from a parent who pretends to be perfect.

The Growth Mindset

Carol Dweck's research on growth mindset applies to parenting:

Fixed mindset: "I'm either a good parent or a bad parent. If I've made mistakes, I'm a bad parent and can't change."

Growth mindset: "Parenting is a learning process. I've made mistakes, but I can learn, grow, and do better. My mistakes don't define me—my response to them does."

Model a growth mindset for your children by:

- Admitting mistakes
- Showing them you can change
- Demonstrating that failure isn't final
- Teaching that repair is always possible

Apologizing to Your Children Models Humility and Repair

Many parents believe apologizing to children undermines their authority or makes them look weak. This is false.

Why Parents Resist Apologizing

1. "It undermines my authority" False. Authority based on perfection is fragile and authoritarian. Authority based on integrity and humility is strong and relational.

2. "Children will lose respect for me" False. Children respect parents who are real and humble more than parents who pretend to be perfect.

3. **"They'll use it against me"** Maybe initially, but ultimately they learn that adults can take responsibility for their actions.
4. **"It's not their business—I'm the parent"** False. If your actions hurt them, they deserve an apology.
5. **"I don't want to burden them"** There's a balance—you can apologize without dumping your emotional processing on them.
6. **"My parents never apologized to me"** This is your chance to break that generational pattern.

What Apologizing Actually Does

When you apologize to your children, you:

1. **Model emotional maturity** You show them what it looks like to take responsibility for mistakes.
2. **Teach them to apologize** Children learn to apologize by watching adults apologize. If you never apologize, they won't learn how.
3. **Build trust** Trust is built when people admit mistakes and make repairs. Your children will trust you more, not less.
4. **Break cycles** If your parents never apologized, you're breaking a generational pattern of pride and emotional unavailability.
5. **Repair the relationship** Unacknowledged wounds fester. Acknowledged wounds can heal.
6. **Release them from false responsibility** When you don't apologize, children often believe they caused the problem. Your apology clarifies: "This was my mistake, not yours."
7. **Show that repair is possible** This is perhaps the most important gift: teaching them that relationships can be repaired, that mistakes aren't fatal, that there's always a path back to connection.

The Research on Parental Apology

Research shows that parental apologies:

- Strengthen the parent-child relationship
- Increase children's emotional security
- Teach emotional regulation and repair
- Model healthy relationship skills
- Reduce shame and blame in children
- Increase children's willingness to apologize themselves

Your apology is not weakness. It's strength. It's modeling healthy relationship repair.

What Children Learn

When you apologize, your children learn:

- Adults make mistakes and that's okay
- Mistakes can be repaired
- Relationships survive conflict and repair
- Taking responsibility is mature
- It's safe to admit when you're wrong
- People can change
- Love includes accountability

These are crucial life lessons.

Age-Appropriate Apologies

The content and depth of your apology should match your child's developmental level.

Toddlers/Preschoolers (Ages 2-5)

What they can understand:

- Simple cause and effect
- Feelings (mad, sad, happy, scared)
- "I'm sorry"
- Actions connecting to feelings

How to apologize:

Keep it simple, concrete, and connected to immediate behavior.

Example: "Mommy yelled at you. That was wrong. Yelling hurt your feelings. I'm sorry. I should have used a calm voice. Can I give you a hug?"

Don't:

- Over-explain adult reasons
- Expect them to comfort you
- Make it about your emotions

Do:

- Keep it brief
- Connect behavior to feeling
- Offer physical comfort
- Model repair quickly

Elementary Age (Ages 6-11)

What they can understand:

- More complex emotions
- Cause and effect
- That adults make mistakes
- That behavior affects others

- Basic concepts of fairness

How to apologize:

More detail, but still concrete and focused on the specific incident.

Example: "I need to apologize. Yesterday when you forgot your homework, I got really angry and said some mean things about you being irresponsible. That wasn't fair. You made a mistake, but I overreacted. Everyone forgets things sometimes. I should have helped you problem-solve instead of being harsh. I'm sorry I hurt your feelings. I'm going to work on responding better when you make mistakes."

Don't:

- Make them responsible for your emotions
- Share adult-level processing
- Expect them to reassure you

Do:

- Name what you did specifically
- Acknowledge how it affected them
- Say what you'll do differently
- Keep focus on them, not your emotions

Tweens/Middle School (Ages 12-14)**What they can understand:**

- Complex emotions
- Patterns of behavior
- That parents are flawed humans
- Psychological concepts
- Long-term effects

How to apologize:

More depth, acknowledging patterns if relevant, but still boundaried.

Example: "I need to talk to you about something I've realized. I've been making you responsible for my emotions. When I'm upset, I've expected you to fix it or I've made you feel like you caused it. When you want to spend time with friends, I've guilted you. I can see that this has made you anxious and made you feel like you have to take care of me. That's not fair to you and it's not your job. I'm sorry. I'm working on this, and I'm going to do better about managing my own emotions without putting that on you."

Don't:

- Turn it into a therapy session
- Expect them to process it for you
- Make them comfort you
- Over-explain the psychology

Do:

- Acknowledge patterns if relevant
- Be specific about what will change
- Allow them to respond (or not)
- Follow up with changed behavior

Teens (Ages 15-18)

What they can understand:

- Everything adults understand
- Complex relationship dynamics
- Psychological patterns
- Long-term consequences

How to apologize:

Adult-level conversation, acknowledging the full impact, but still boundaried.

Example: "I need to apologize to you for some patterns I've had in our relationship. I've been treating you more like a friend or confidant than my child. I've shared my marriage problems with you. I've made you feel responsible for my happiness. I've been controlling about your choices because of my anxiety, not because they were actually dangerous. I can see that this has hurt you—you struggle with boundaries, you're anxious, and you feel responsible for everyone's emotions. That's not what I wanted for you, but it's what I created. I'm sorry. I'm working on this in therapy. I'm going to stop sharing adult problems with you. I'm going to give you appropriate freedom. And I'm going to work on my own anxiety instead of making it your problem. I know I've done damage, and I'm committed to changing."

Don't:

- Expect immediate forgiveness
- Dump all your processing on them
- Make them your therapist
- Turn it into a long therapy session for you

Do:

- Be fully honest about patterns
- Acknowledge the real impact
- Be specific about changes
- Allow them space to respond
- Respect if they need time

Adult Children

How to apologize:

Fully adult conversation, acknowledging years of patterns and inviting their perspective.

Example: "I need to talk with you about something I've been realizing in therapy. Looking back at how I parented you, I can see I had a lot of co-dependent patterns. I made you responsible for my emotions. I was controlling because of my anxiety. I [specific examples]. I can see now how this affected you—[specific impacts you've observed]. I'm deeply sorry. I know I can't undo the past, but I want to acknowledge what I did and tell you I'm working on changing. If you want to talk about specific things that hurt you, I'm willing to listen. And I'm committed to having a healthier relationship going forward."

Don't:

- Expect them to comfort you or say "it's okay"
- Defend yourself if they share pain
- Make excuses

Do:

- Give them space to share their experience
- Listen without defending
- Acknowledge their pain
- Be patient with their process
- Show change over time

Making Amends Without Over-Explaining or Burdening Them

There's a fine line between a healthy apology and using your child as your therapist. Let's clarify it.

What a Healthy Apology Includes

- 1. Acknowledgment of what you did** "I yelled at you." "I made you responsible for my emotions." "I was controlling."
- 2. Recognition of how it affected them** "That hurt your feelings." "That made you anxious." "That made you feel responsible for me."
- 3. Taking full responsibility** "That was wrong. That was my mistake. That's on me."
- 4. Genuine remorse** "I'm sorry. I regret that I did that."
- 5. Commitment to change** "I'm going to work on responding differently." "I'm in therapy dealing with this."
- 6. No excuses or justifications** Not: "I yelled because you wouldn't listen." But: "I yelled. That was wrong. I should have stayed calm."

What a Healthy Apology DOESN'T Include

- 1. Expecting them to comfort you** Don't: "I'm such a terrible parent! Please tell me I haven't ruined you!"
- 2. Over-explaining your psychological processing** Don't: "I realized that I've been reenacting my relationship with my mother because she was emotionally unavailable and I've been trying to get from you what I never got from her, and my therapist says I have attachment trauma..."

Keep your processing for therapy, not for your child.
- 3. Making it about your emotions** Don't: "I feel so guilty! I can't stand that I've hurt you! This is so hard for me!"

The focus should be on their experience, not yours.
- 4. Asking them to reassure you** Don't: "You still love me, right? We're okay, right? You forgive me, right?"
- 5. Defending or justifying** Don't: "I know I yelled, but you weren't listening and I was so stressed and..."
- 6. Conditional apology** Don't: "I'm sorry, but if you had just..."

The Balance

Appropriate: "I've been making you responsible for my emotions. That's not fair to you. I'm sorry. I'm working on this."

Too much: "I've been making you responsible for my emotions because of my own childhood trauma and my relationship with my mother, and I'm in therapy processing my attachment issues, and it's really hard for me, and I feel so guilty about what I've done to you, and I need you to tell me you're okay..."

Too little: "Sorry I yelled. Let's move on."

The apology should be enough to acknowledge and repair, but not so much that it burdens them with your emotional processing.

The Litmus Test

Ask yourself:

- Is this apology for them, or is it for me?
- Am I taking responsibility without making excuses?
- Am I asking them to comfort me or process my emotions?
- Am I keeping appropriate boundaries?
- Is the focus on their experience or mine?

What Changes After the Apology

The most important part: An apology means nothing without changed behavior.

The Follow-Through

"He who conceals his transgressions will not prosper, but he who confesses and forsakes them will find compassion."

—Proverbs 28:13 (NASB)

Notice: "confesses AND forsakes."

It's not enough to apologize. You must also change.

If you apologize for yelling but keep yelling: Your apology is empty.

If you apologize for being controlling but keep controlling: Your apology is manipulation.

If you apologize for emotional enmeshment but keep treating them as your confidant: Your apology is meaningless.

What Changed Behavior Looks Like

1. You do the work

- Therapy
- Reading
- Support groups
- Spiritual work
- Identifying triggers
- Learning new skills

2. You catch yourself When you start falling into old patterns, you notice and stop yourself.

"I'm about to start sharing my marriage problems with you. That's not appropriate. I'm going to talk to my therapist about this instead."

3. You course-correct quickly When you mess up (and you will), you acknowledge it quickly.

"I just yelled at you again. That's not okay. I'm sorry. I'm going to take a break and calm down."

4. You demonstrate new patterns

- Managing your own emotions
- Giving appropriate freedom
- Respecting boundaries

- Having other support systems
- Making decisions without guilt

5. You're consistent over time Not perfect, but consistently better. They see real change over weeks and months.

When You Slip Up

You will slip back into old patterns sometimes. What matters is how you handle it:

Immediate repair: "I just did the thing I said I wouldn't do. I'm sorry. Let me try that again."

Don't:

- Make excuses: "Well, you made me..."
- Give up: "See, I can't change."
- Expect them to make it okay: "You understand, right?"

Do:

- Acknowledge it quickly
- Apologize again briefly
- Course-correct
- Continue working on change

Progress, Not Perfection

Your children need to see:

- Overall trajectory of change
- Genuine effort
- Humility when you mess up
- Commitment to growth

They don't need:

- Perfection
- Never making mistakes
- Getting it right every time

The message: "I'm not perfect, but I'm committed to growing and doing better. When I mess up, I'll own it and keep trying."

A Good Apology Template

Here's a template you can adapt for different situations and ages:

The Five-Part Apology

- 1. What I did (specific, no excuses)** "I [specific behavior]. "
- 2. How it affected you (acknowledge their experience)** "That [how it impacted them]."
- 3. Why it was wrong (take responsibility)** "That was wrong because [reason]."
- 4. Genuine apology (simple, sincere)** "I'm sorry."
- 5. What will change (commitment to different behavior)** "Going forward, I will [specific change]."

Examples by Situation

For yelling: "I yelled at you when you spilled your drink. That scared you and hurt your feelings. Yelling is not okay, even when I'm frustrated. I'm sorry. When I'm frustrated, I'm going to take a deep breath and use a calm voice, even if I need to take a minute to calm down first."

For being controlling: "I've been controlling every detail of your life—your schedule, your friends, your choices. That hasn't let you develop independence or learn to make your own decisions. That was wrong. I was managing my own anxiety instead of helping you grow. I'm sorry. I'm going to

start giving you age-appropriate freedom to make choices, even if it makes me anxious."

For emotional enmeshment: "I've been treating you like my therapist, sharing my adult problems with you and making you feel responsible for my happiness. That put way too much on you and wasn't fair. You're my child, not my counselor. I'm sorry. I'm going to stop sharing adult problems with you and work on my issues with other adults."

For making them responsible for your emotions: "When I'm upset, I've made you feel like you caused it or that you have to fix it. That's made you anxious and overly responsible for others' emotions. That wasn't right. I'm sorry. I'm going to work on managing my emotions without putting that on you."

For perfectionism/criticism: "I've been overly critical and made you feel like nothing you do is good enough. That's hurt your confidence and made you afraid to try things. That was wrong. I'm sorry. I'm going to celebrate your efforts and growth instead of focusing on perfection."

What to Say When You've Been Co-Dependent

Let's get specific about apologizing for co-dependent patterns.

For Young Children (Under 10)

Keep it simple and behavior-focused:

"Sometimes when I'm upset, I've been grumpy with you or acted like you made me upset. That's not fair. My feelings are not your job to fix. You didn't do anything wrong. I'm working on feeling my feelings without being grumpy at you. I'm sorry."

For Tweens/Teens

More detail about patterns:

"I need to apologize for some things I've been doing. I've been making you responsible for how I feel. When I'm sad or upset, I've acted like you

caused it or like you need to fix it. I've shared things with you about [adult problems] that you shouldn't have to carry. I can see this has made you anxious and made you feel like you have to take care of me emotionally. That's backwards—I'm the parent, you're the child. I'm supposed to take care of you, not the other way around. I'm sorry. I'm working on this. I'm going to stop sharing those things with you and start handling my emotions with other adults."

For Adult Children

Full acknowledgment of long-term patterns:

"I need to talk with you about something I've been working on in therapy. Looking back at how I parented you, I can see that I had significant co-dependent patterns. I made you responsible for my emotional wellbeing. I [specific examples: shared my marriage problems with you, guilted you when you wanted independence, made my identity about your achievements, controlled your choices to manage my anxiety, etc.]. I can see how this affected you—[specific impacts: you struggle with boundaries, you're a people-pleaser, you have anxiety, you have trouble saying no, etc.]. I'm deeply sorry. You deserved a parent who could manage their own emotions and let you just be a kid. I put too much on you. I know I can't change the past, but I want you to know I recognize what I did, I take full responsibility, and I'm committed to having a healthier relationship with you going forward. If there are specific things you want to talk about, I'm here to listen."

When They Respond

They might:

- Say "it's okay" (kids often try to make parents feel better—don't rely on this)
- Be angry
- Be relieved

- Be confused
- Need time to process
- Want to talk about it
- Not want to talk about it

Your response:

If they say "it's okay": "Thank you for being gracious. But it's okay for you to have feelings about this. You don't have to make me feel better."

If they're angry: "You have every right to be angry. I understand."

If they want to talk: Listen without defending. Acknowledge their experience. Apologize again if needed.

If they don't want to talk: "That's okay. You can think about it. If you want to talk later, I'm here. And whether we talk about it or not, I'm going to work on changing."

Teaching Them to Apologize Well By Modeling

One of the greatest gifts of parental apology: you're teaching your children how to apologize.

What They Learn From Your Apology

When you apologize well, they learn:

1. Adults can be wrong And that's okay. Being wrong doesn't mean you're bad—it means you're human.

2. Mistakes can be repaired Relationships aren't destroyed by mistakes; they're destroyed by refusing to acknowledge and repair them.

3. Taking responsibility is strength Not weakness. It takes courage to say "I was wrong."

4. How to apologize The structure, the tone, the sincerity. They're learning by watching you.

5. Relationships involve repair Healthy relationships include conflict AND repair. Both are normal.

6. Change is possible People can recognize their patterns and change them.

Coaching Their Apologies

When your child needs to apologize, you can coach them using what you've modeled:

"What happened? What did you do? How did that affect your sister? What would be a good way to apologize?"

Help them learn the structure:

- What I did
- How it affected you
- I'm sorry
- What I'll do differently

Don't:

- Force insincere apologies ("Say sorry!")
- Write scripts for them word-for-word
- Make them apologize before they're ready (unless safety issue)

Do:

- Coach them on what a good apology includes
- Help them identify what they did and how it affected the other person
- Model taking responsibility yourself
- Acknowledge when they apologize well

The Long-Term Impact

20 years from now:

Your now-adult children know how to:

- Acknowledge when they're wrong
- Apologize sincerely
- Take responsibility without defensiveness
- Repair relationships after conflict
- Change patterns when they realize they're unhealthy

Because you taught them—by modeling it yourself.

Repairing Past Damage With Older Children/Adult Children

What if your children are already grown? What if years of co-dependent patterns have already happened?

It's Not Too Late

The belief: "I've already done the damage. They're adults now. It's too late to repair."

The truth: It's never too late to acknowledge what happened and work toward repair.

Will it undo the past? No.

Will it instantly heal all damage? No.

But can it begin a process of healing? Yes.

What Repair Looks Like With Adult Children

1. Full acknowledgment

A comprehensive apology that names the patterns and their impact.

"Looking back, I can see that I [specific co-dependent patterns over years]. I can see how this affected you [specific impacts]. I'm deeply sorry."

2. Invitation for their perspective

"If there are things you want to tell me about how my parenting affected you, I want to hear them. I won't defend myself. I just want to understand your experience."

3. Demonstrated change in the current relationship

This is crucial. They need to see that your relationship NOW is different.

Examples:

- You no longer make them responsible for your emotions
- You respect their boundaries
- You don't guilt them about their choices
- You have your own life and relationships
- You treat them as adults, not extensions of yourself

4. Patience with their process

They might:

- Need time before they're ready to talk
- Be angry for a while
- Test whether you've really changed
- Have complicated feelings
- Need to process in therapy
- Take years to fully trust the change

Give them space and time.

5. Consistency over years

One apology doesn't fix years of patterns. They need to see consistent change over time.

What If They Don't Forgive?

This is painful, but possible.

Some adult children:

- Are too hurt to engage
- Need distance to heal
- Aren't ready to forgive
- May never fully trust you again

What you can do:

- Respect their boundaries
- Continue your own work of healing and growth
- Demonstrate change in whatever relationship they're willing to have
- Don't pressure them to forgive or reconcile on your timeline
- Trust that God is working in their healing journey
- Keep the door open without pursuing them inappropriately

Sometimes repair takes years. Sometimes it's partial. Sometimes it doesn't happen in this life.

But you can still do your part:

- Acknowledge what you did
- Apologize sincerely
- Change your behavior
- Do your own healing work
- Respect their boundaries
- Trust God with the outcome

A Letter of Apology

If face-to-face conversation isn't possible or appropriate, consider a letter:

Guidelines:

- Be specific about what you're apologizing for
- Acknowledge the impact on them
- Take full responsibility
- Don't make excuses
- Express genuine remorse
- Explain what you're doing to change
- Make it clear you don't expect anything from them
- Respect whatever they decide

Example:

Dear [Name],

I've been doing a lot of reflection and work in therapy, and I need to apologize to you for how I parented you. Looking back, I can see that I had significant co-dependent patterns that hurt you.

[Specific examples of co-dependent behavior]

I can see now how this affected you. [Specific impacts you've observed or they've told you]

This was wrong. You deserved a parent who could manage their own emotions, who could let you be your own person, who gave you the freedom to grow. Instead, I made you responsible for me emotionally, and that wasn't fair.

I'm deeply sorry. I can't change the past, but I want you to know I recognize what I did, I take full responsibility, and I'm committed to doing better.

I'm working on this in therapy. I'm learning to manage my own emotions, develop my own support systems, and relate to you in healthier ways. You're going to see changes in how I interact with you.

I don't expect you to respond to this or to forgive me right away. Take whatever time you need. If you want to talk about any of this, I'm here to listen without defending myself. If you're not ready, that's okay too.

Whatever you decide about our relationship going forward, I want you to know: None of this was your fault. You didn't cause my co-dependency. That was my issue, not yours. And I'm working on it.

I love you, and I'm committed to being a healthier parent, even now.

[Your name]

The Freedom of Humility

Let me end with a vision of what's possible when you embrace humility and repair.

What Happens When You Apologize

For your children:

- Release from false guilt ("It wasn't my fault")
- Permission to have their feelings
- Model of healthy relationship repair
- Healing of wounds
- Restored trust (over time)
- Freedom to be themselves
- Hope that change is possible

For you:

- Freedom from the burden of pretending to be perfect

- Deeper, more authentic relationship with your children
- Modeling the gospel (confession, repentance, grace)
- Breaking generational patterns
- Growing in humility and Christlikeness
- The joy of watching your children heal

The Gospel in Repair

When you apologize to your children, you're preaching the gospel:

- We all sin (parents included)
- Sin has consequences
- Confession and repentance are the path to healing
- Restoration is possible
- God's grace covers our mistakes
- Change is real

Your children learn: "When I mess up, I can acknowledge it, apologize, and change. Mistakes aren't fatal. Relationships can be repaired. There's always a path back to connection."

This is the gospel lived out in your family.

The Long-Term Vision

20 years from now:

Your now-adult children know how to:

- Take responsibility for their mistakes
- Apologize sincerely and specifically
- Repair relationships after conflict
- See mistakes as opportunities for growth, not as identity statements

- Maintain relationships through seasons of difficulty
- Extend grace to themselves and others

And they remember: My parent wasn't perfect. But when they messed up, they owned it. They apologized. They changed. That taught me that I can do the same.

This is the gift of repair.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- Perfection isn't the goal—humility and growth are
- Apologizing to children models healthy relationship repair and doesn't undermine authority
- Age-appropriate apologies match developmental understanding
- A good apology acknowledges what you did, how it affected them, takes responsibility, expresses genuine remorse, and commits to change
- The apology must be followed by changed behavior—"confess AND forsake"
- Don't over-explain or use your child as your therapist
- It's never too late to repair, even with adult children
- Your willingness to apologize teaches your children how to apologize

Remember: Your children don't need perfect parents—they need humble parents who own their mistakes and grow. Repair is always possible. Changed behavior proves the sincerity of your apology.

Action Steps This Week:

1. Identify one co-dependent pattern you need to apologize for

2. Write out an age-appropriate apology using the five-part template
 3. Schedule a time to have the conversation
 4. Follow through with the apology
 5. Identify specific changes you'll make and start implementing them
-

Reflection Questions:

1. What co-dependent patterns do you need to apologize to your children for?
 2. What has kept you from apologizing before now? (Pride? Shame? Fear?)
 3. How did your parents handle mistakes? Did they apologize? How has that affected you?
 4. What would it mean for your children to see you humble enough to say "I was wrong"?
 5. What specific behavior changes will you make to back up your apology?
 6. If you have adult children, what would it look like to repair past damage?
-

Prayer for Humility and Repair:

Father, this is hard. Admitting I've been wrong, acknowledging I've hurt my children—it's painful and humbling. But I know I need to do this. Give me courage to apologize. Give me humility to take full responsibility without making excuses. Give me wisdom to know what to say and how to say it in ways my children can receive. Help me not to burden them with my processing or expect them to comfort me. Let my apology be for their healing, not for my relief from guilt. And Father, most importantly, help me change. Don't let my apology be empty words. Give me the strength and consistency to demonstrate different behavior. Help me break these co-dependent patterns. Transform me so that my children see real change over time. When I slip back

into old patterns, help me acknowledge it quickly and course-correct. Teach me what it means to confess AND forsake. Use this process of repair to bring healing to my children, to teach them about relationship repair, and to model the gospel in our family. Thank You that Your grace covers my mistakes as a parent. Thank You that it's never too late to change. Give me hope that repair is possible. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"Therefore, confess your sins to one another, and pray for one another so that you may be healed."

—James 5:16 (NASB)

"Therefore if you are presenting your offering at the altar, and there remember that your brother has something against you, leave your offering there before the altar and go; first be reconciled to your brother, and then come and present your offering."

—Matthew 5:23-24 (NASB)

"He who conceals his transgressions will not prosper, but he who confesses and forsakes them will find compassion."

—Proverbs 28:13 (NASB)

CHAPTER 14

Co-Parenting Without Co-Dependence: United Front, Healthy Boundaries

"But from the beginning of creation, God made them male and female. For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother, and the two shall become one flesh; so they are no longer two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let no man separate."

—Mark 10:6-9 (NASB)

Lisa and David sat in the therapist's office, both frustrated and exhausted.

"He undermines me constantly," Lisa said. "I set a rule, and he changes it. I discipline the kids, and he swoops in as the 'good guy' and makes me look like the villain."

David shook his head. "Because your rules are ridiculous. You're controlling every detail of their lives. They're teenagers, and you treat them like toddlers. Someone has to give them some freedom."

"So you just ignore what I say?"

"So you just ignore what I think?"

The therapist let the silence hang for a moment, then asked, "When was the last time you two actually talked about parenting—like, really talked, as a team, trying to come to agreement?"

Lisa and David looked at each other. Neither could remember.

"We don't talk," Lisa finally said. "We just... react. I make a decision. He disagrees. He makes a different decision. I get mad. The kids play us against each other. It's chaos."

"And in all this," the therapist said gently, "where are the kids?"

"In the middle," David admitted. "They've learned to ask Mom for one thing and Dad for another. They know we'll disagree."

"They come to me complaining about their dad," Lisa said quietly. "And I... I listen. Sometimes I agree with them. Sometimes I complain about him too."

"And I take them out for ice cream and tell them Mom is just stressed," David added. "I make myself the fun parent and her the mean one."

The therapist nodded. "So you're not parenting as partners. You're parenting against each other. And your children are caught in the middle, learning to manipulate, getting mixed messages, and probably feeling very insecure because their parents can't present a united front."

The truth hit hard.

"We used to be a team," Lisa said, tears forming. "Before kids, we were partners. But somewhere along the way, the kids became more important than us. I stopped caring what David thought as long as I could control the kids my way. And we stopped being 'us' and became 'me and the kids' versus 'him.'"

"And I checked out," David said. "When she got so controlling, I just... gave up trying to co-parent and decided to be the kids' friend instead."

The therapist leaned forward. "Here's what I'm going to tell you: Your children need you to be a team more than they need either of your individual parenting approaches to 'win.' When you parent against each other, you create insecurity and teach them to manipulate. When you parent as partners—even imperfectly—you create security and teach them what healthy relationships look like."

That session changed everything. Lisa and David started having weekly parenting meetings. They stopped undermining each other. They learned to disagree privately and present a united front publicly. They stopped using the kids as emotional support against each other.

It wasn't easy. They had to rebuild trust. They had to compromise. They had to put their marriage ahead of their individual relationships with the kids.

But six months later, their family was different. The kids stopped manipulating. The chaos decreased. And Lisa and David felt like partners again.

This chapter addresses one of the most complex aspects of healthy parenting: **how to co-parent without co-dependent patterns, how to maintain your marriage/partnership as the primary relationship, and how to present a united front while still respecting each other's perspectives.**

Whether you're married, partnered, single, divorced, or in a blended family, the principles in this chapter apply to your situation. The specifics might look different, but the core truth remains: **Co-dependent parenting patterns are often intertwined with relationship dynamics, and healing requires addressing both.**

Marriage/Partnership Is the Primary Relationship—Not the Kids

This might be the most controversial statement in this book for some readers, but it's crucial: **If you're married or partnered, that relationship is your primary relationship. Your relationship with your children is secondary.**

The Biblical Order

Scripture is clear about the order of relationships:

"For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother, and the two shall become one flesh."

—Mark 10:8 (NASB)

Notice the order:

1. Leave your family of origin
2. Become one flesh with your spouse
3. Then, if blessed with children, parent them together

The marriage relationship existed before children and should exist after children leave. Children are temporary residents in your home. Your spouse is your lifelong partner.

*"Be subject to one another in the fear of Christ."
—Ephesians 5:21 (NASB)*

Mutual submission and partnership in marriage is the model. When children become the primary relationship, this order is disrupted.

Why This Matters

When marriage is the primary relationship:

- 1. Children feel secure** They know their parents are a team. This creates stability.
- 2. Children learn what healthy marriage looks like** You're modeling for their future relationships.
- 3. Children aren't burdened with being the center of the universe** They get to be children, not the glue holding the family together.
- 4. Parents have emotional support** You support each other, not relying on children for emotional needs.
- 5. The marriage survives after children leave** You don't wake up as empty nesters with nothing in common.

When children become the primary relationship:

- 1. Children feel insecure** They sense the marriage is fragile and may feel responsible for holding it together.
- 2. Children are triangulated** They're pulled into adult conflicts and used as emotional support.
- 3. Parents become divided** Instead of partners, you become competitors for the children's affection.

4. Co-dependency develops Parents use children to meet emotional needs that should be met in adult relationships.

5. The marriage deteriorates Eventually, often after children leave, the marriage collapses because there's nothing left.

What This Doesn't Mean

This doesn't mean:

- Neglecting your children
- Making children feel unimportant
- Never prioritizing children's needs
- Choosing your spouse over your children in all situations
- Ignoring children's emotional or physical needs

It means:

- Your emotional intimacy is primarily with your spouse, not your children
- You and your spouse make decisions as a team
- You protect couple time and couple relationship
- Children aren't in the middle of your marriage
- You model that romantic partnerships are important and valuable

Practical Application

Prioritizing marriage while properly caring for children looks like:

Time together:

- Regular date nights (even at home)
- Couple time that doesn't include children
- Affection and connection in front of children (appropriate)
- Prioritizing conversation with each other

Decision-making:

- Discussing parenting decisions together
- Presenting a united front
- Supporting each other even when you initially disagreed
- Not letting children drive wedges between you

Emotional intimacy:

- Sharing your day with each other, not just with children
- Processing emotions with each other, not with children
- Supporting each other through difficulties
- Being each other's primary confidant

Boundaries:

- Children aren't in your bed regularly (age-appropriate)
- Children don't come before your marriage in all decisions
- Some family decisions prioritize the marriage
- Children learn parents need couple time

When This Is Hard**This is especially hard when:**

- Your marriage is struggling
- You have more conflict than connection
- You're avoiding your spouse by focusing on children
- One partner has checked out
- There's been betrayal or hurt

If this is your situation:

- Work on your marriage (therapy, books, pastoral counseling)
- Don't use children as an excuse to avoid marriage work
- Don't make children your emotional substitute for your spouse
- Get help for the marriage issues, don't just cover them with parenting

The answer to marriage struggles is not to make children your primary relationship. It's to work on the marriage.

Disagreeing About Parenting Approaches

All co-parents disagree sometimes. The question is how you handle it.

Why Parents Disagree

Common reasons for parenting disagreements:

- 1. Different upbringings** You each parent the way you were parented (or in reaction to how you were parented).
- 2. Different values or priorities** One values achievement; the other values relationship. One prioritizes safety; the other prioritizes independence.
- 3. Different personalities** One is more structured; the other is more flexible. One is more emotional; the other is more logical.
- 4. Different levels of involvement** The parent who does most of the day-to-day parenting may see things differently than the less-involved parent.
- 5. Unresolved personal issues** Your own wounds, anxiety, trauma, or patterns affect your parenting views.
- 6. Power struggles** Sometimes disagreements aren't really about parenting—they're about control, respect, or being heard.

Healthy Disagreement vs. Undermining

Healthy disagreement:

- Discussing differences privately

- Listening to each other's perspective
- Working toward compromise
- Presenting a united decision to children
- Respecting the agreement even if you didn't fully agree

Undermining:

- Disagreeing in front of children
- Changing the other parent's decision without discussion
- Bad-mouthing the other parent to children
- Going behind the other parent's back
- Rescuing children from the other parent's discipline
- Making yourself the "good parent" and the other the "bad parent"

The Framework for Handling Disagreements

Step 1: Disagree privately

When you disagree about a parenting decision, take it out of children's presence.

"Let's talk about this in our room." "We need to discuss this. Kids, give us a few minutes."

Don't:

- Argue in front of children
- Undermine each other publicly
- Let children see you as divided

Step 2: Really listen

Hear each other out. Try to understand the other's perspective.

"Help me understand why you think..." "What are you concerned about?"
"What's important to you in this situation?"

Step 3: Look for compromise

Most situations have middle ground.

"What if we..." "Could we try it your way for a week and see?" "What parts of each approach could we combine?"

Step 4: Agree on a unified approach

Come to an agreement you can both support, even if neither of you got everything you wanted.

Step 5: Present unity to children

Even if you compromised, present the decision as "we decided."

"Your mom and I talked it over, and we've decided..." "Dad and I agree that..."

Not: "Well, I wanted to let you, but your mother said no."

Step 6: Support each other's implementation

Once you've agreed, back each other up.

When You Can't Agree

If you truly can't agree:

1. Identify if this is a hill to die on Not every disagreement is equal. Is this a core value or a preference?

2. Consider whose domain this is Some decisions might fall more naturally to one parent's expertise or involvement.

3. Try it one way for a time "Let's try your approach for two weeks and see how it goes."

4. Get outside help If you're stuck, talk to a counselor, pastor, or parenting coach.

5. In the moment, defer to whoever initiated If you can't quickly agree and a decision must be made now, the parent who initiated the decision makes the call, with the understanding that you'll discuss it later.

What NOT to do:

- Undermine each other
- Let children see you divided
- Make it a power struggle
- Use children as pawns

Areas of Common Disagreement

Discipline: One parent is stricter; the other is more lenient.

Solution: Agree on non-negotiables and areas where either approach is acceptable.

Screen time/technology: One parent is more permissive; the other is more restrictive.

Solution: Set specific agreed-upon limits rather than leaving it vague.

Independence: One parent wants to give more freedom; the other is more protective.

Solution: Use risk assessment framework from Chapter 11. Agree on age-appropriate freedoms.

Activities/commitments: One parent wants the kids involved in everything; the other wants more downtime.

Solution: Set a limit on number of activities and let children choose within that limit.

Academic expectations: One parent is focused on achievement; the other is focused on effort/character.

Solution: Agree that both matter—character is primary, but effort/excellence are valued.

When One Parent Is Co-Dependent and the Other Isn't

This is one of the most challenging dynamics: one parent recognizes co-dependent patterns and wants to change, while the other doesn't see the problem.

The Typical Scenarios

Scenario 1: Co-dependent mom, distant dad Mom is enmeshed with children. Dad has checked out, works all the time, or just does his own thing. Mom and kids form a tight unit. Dad is on the outside.

Scenario 2: Co-dependent dad, independent mom Dad is overly involved, controlling, or enmeshed. Mom is trying to maintain boundaries but is constantly undermined.

Scenario 3: One parent recognizes the problem One parent reads this book and realizes, "I've been co-dependent." The other parent thinks everything is fine or that the "aware" parent is overreacting.

If You're the One Recognizing the Problem

What to do:

1. Start with yourself Don't wait for your spouse to change. Begin changing your own patterns.

2. Explain what you're learning "I've been reading about co-dependent parenting, and I'm realizing I've been doing some of these things. I want to change."

3. Invite them to learn with you "Would you read this book/article with me?" "Can we talk about how we're parenting?"

4. Don't be preachy or accusatory Don't: "You're so co-dependent! You need to change!" Do: "I'm noticing some patterns in how we parent. Can we talk about whether these are healthy?"

5. Focus on shared goals "We both want our kids to be independent and healthy. Let's talk about whether what we're doing is moving toward that goal."

6. Be patient Change takes time. Your spouse might need to process this over months.

7. Get outside help if needed "I think we'd benefit from talking to a counselor about our parenting approach."

8. Make changes gradually Don't suddenly change everything. That will feel threatening to your spouse and confusing to your kids.

9. Model health Show your spouse what healthier patterns look like.

10. Accept you can only control yourself You can't force your spouse to change. You can only change your own behavior.

If Your Spouse Is Resistant

Some spouses will:

- Deny there's a problem
- Get defensive
- Accuse you of overreacting
- Refuse to discuss it
- Undermine your attempts to change

What to do:

1. Keep working on yourself Even if your spouse won't change, you can still change your patterns.

2. Set boundaries where possible "I'm not going to share adult problems with the kids anymore." "I'm going to stop rescuing them from consequences."

3. Don't engage in power struggles If your spouse undermines you, address it privately, not in front of children.

4. Protect your kids where you can If your spouse is engaging in harmful patterns you can't stop, at least don't participate.

5. Get support Therapy for yourself, support group, trusted friends.

6. Model health Your children benefit from seeing at least one parent demonstrating healthy patterns.

7. Be honest with older kids (carefully) If your children are older teens/adults and comment on family dynamics, you can (carefully) acknowledge reality without bad-mouthing your spouse.

"I'm working on some patterns I've had. I'm trying to do better."

Not: "Your father is so co-dependent and won't change."

If Both of You Are Co-Dependent

Sometimes both parents have co-dependent patterns—just different ones:

- Mom is enmeshed emotionally; Dad is controlling behaviorally
- Both compete for children's affection
- Both make children their primary relationship

What to do:

1. Recognize you're both part of the problem This isn't about who's worse. You're both contributing.

2. Work on this together "We both have work to do. Let's do this together."

3. Support each other's growth When one of you slips back into old patterns, gently remind each other.

4. Celebrate progress Notice when your spouse makes healthy changes.

5. Get help together Couples therapy can be invaluable.

6. Be patient with the process You're both learning. You'll both mess up. Give each other grace.

Single Parenting and Co-Dependency

Single parents face unique challenges in avoiding co-dependent patterns.

Why Single Parents Are At Higher Risk

- 1. You're everything to your children** Provider, caregiver, emotional support, disciplinarian, fun parent—all in one.
- 2. Loneliness** It's easy to make children your primary emotional support when you don't have a partner.
- 3. Guilt** Guilt about the divorce, the absent parent, what your children have lost—can drive you to overcompensate.
- 4. Fewer checks and balances** No one to point out when you're being co-dependent.
- 5. Exhaustion** You're doing everything alone. It's easier to fall into unhealthy patterns when depleted.
- 6. Role confusion** When you're alone, lines can blur between parent-child relationship and friend relationship.

Common Co-Dependent Patterns for Single Parents

- 1. Making children your confidants** Sharing too much about adult problems, loneliness, the ex, finances.
- 2. Role reversal** The oldest child becomes "the man/woman of the house" or "my helper."
- 3. Seeking emotional support from children** "Mommy needs a hug. I had such a hard day."
- 4. Making children your social life** Having no adult friendships or activities outside of children.
- 5. Overcompensating** Trying to be both parents, doing everything, never saying no.

6. Bad-mouthing the other parent Using children as emotional support in your anger/hurt toward the ex.

7. Making decisions based on guilt "I feel guilty about the divorce, so I'll give them whatever they want."

Healthy Single Parenting Without Co-Dependency

1. Maintain appropriate boundaries

Children are still children, not:

- Your friends
- Your confidants
- Your emotional support
- Your partners
- Substitute spouses

You can:

- Share age-appropriate information
- Have warm, close relationships
- Involve them in family decisions
- Build strong bonds

But maintain:

- Adult problems stay with adults
- Your emotional needs are met by adults
- Children aren't responsible for your happiness
- Clear parent-child roles

2. Build adult support systems

Essential:

- Adult friendships
- Support groups for single parents
- Church community
- Therapy if needed
- Family support (if healthy)
- Dating/romantic relationships (when appropriate)

Your children cannot be your primary emotional support.

3. Have a life beyond parenting

Even as a single parent, you need:

- Hobbies
- Interests
- Activities without children
- Identity beyond "parent"
- Social connections
- Personal growth

This isn't selfish. It's necessary.

4. Don't make children substitute spouses

Don't:

- Sleep with your child in your bed regularly (beyond age-appropriate)
- Make them your date to events
- expect them to fill the emotional role of a partner
- Treat them like adults when they're not

Do:

- Maintain appropriate physical boundaries
- Have adult companionship for adult events
- Keep parent-child relationship clear
- Let them be children

5. Manage your loneliness appropriately

Loneliness is real for single parents. Handle it through:

- Adult friendships
- Community involvement
- Support groups
- Healthy dating when ready
- Hobbies and interests
- Connection with God

Not through:

- Making children your companions
- Emotional enmeshment with children
- Isolation with just you and kids

6. Don't badmouth the other parent

Even if your ex is difficult, terrible, or absent—don't use children as your emotional dumping ground.

Children need:

- To form their own relationship (or lack thereof) with the other parent
- To not feel caught in the middle
- To not feel they have to choose sides

- To not carry your anger

You can:

- Acknowledge reality age-appropriately: "Your dad struggles with keeping his promises."
- Validate their feelings: "I understand you're hurt he didn't show up."
- Get support from adults about your feelings regarding your ex

You shouldn't:

- Trash-talk the ex
- Use children as messengers: "Tell your father..."
- Make children report on the other parent
- Make children feel guilty for loving the other parent

7. Build healthy rhythms

Create structure and routine:

- Regular family meals
- Bedtime routines
- Age-appropriate chores and responsibilities
- Family traditions
- Consistent expectations

This creates security and stability.

Special Note: You're Doing Hard Work

Single parenting is difficult. You're doing the work of two people. Cut yourself some grace.

You won't be perfect. You'll have moments of leaning on kids too much, sharing too much, being too tired to maintain boundaries.

What matters:

- Overall trajectory toward health
- Recognizing patterns and adjusting
- Getting support when you need it
- Apologizing when you mess up
- Continuing to grow

Blended Families and Complex Dynamics

Blended families have unique challenges in avoiding co-dependent patterns.

Common Co-Dependent Patterns in Blended Families

1. Bio-parent is enmeshed with their children Excluding the stepparent, making children the primary relationship, not allowing stepparent to have authority.

2. Competition between households "Our house is the fun house." "Your mom's house has too many rules."

3. Guilt-driven parenting Overcompensating because of divorce, trying to be the favorite parent, not holding boundaries.

4. Triangulation Children playing parents and stepparents against each other.

5. Role confusion Unclear about stepparent role, authority, expectations.

6. Ex-spouse involvement Using children to stay connected to ex, not allowing new spouse to be primary relationship.

Healthy Boundaries in Blended Families

1. Marriage is primary

Even with children from previous relationships, your current marriage must be the primary relationship.

This is hard when:

- Your children were with you before this marriage
- You feel guilty about the divorce
- Your children are resistant to the stepparent

But it's necessary for:

- The marriage to survive
- The family to function
- Children to feel secure in the new family structure
- Modeling healthy marriage

2. Clear roles and expectations

Define:

- What authority does stepparent have?
- How is discipline handled?
- What's the stepparent's role?
- How are decisions made?

Recommended approach:

- Bio-parent handles major discipline initially
- Stepparent has authority for household rules
- Gradually stepparent takes on more parental role as relationships develop
- Bio-parent doesn't undermine stepparent

3. United front

Even if the stepparent isn't doing primary discipline, support them publicly.

"[Stepparent] is part of this family. You need to show respect."

4. Don't compete with the other household

Don't:

- Badmouth the other household
- Try to be the "better" or "more fun" parent
- Undermine the other household's rules
- Pump children for information about the other house

Do:

- Accept that the other household does things differently
- Maintain your own household standards
- Speak respectfully about the other parent
- Support children in navigating two households

5. Support the bio-parent/child relationship

Stepparents: Don't try to replace the bio-parent or compete for affection. Support the bond between your spouse and their children.

6. Build stepparent/stepchild relationship slowly

Don't force it. Let relationships develop naturally over time.

7. Maintain appropriate boundaries

Children shouldn't sleep with parents regularly, shouldn't be confidants, shouldn't be in the middle of marriage.

When Ex-Spouses Are Involved

Healthy co-parenting with ex:

1. Business-like communication Keep it focused on children, respectful, brief.

- 2. Don't use children as messengers** Communicate directly with ex, not through children.
- 3. Consistent expectations where possible** Try to align on major rules (bedtime, screen time, respect).
- 4. Respect court orders/parenting plans** Follow agreements even when you disagree.
- 5. Don't badmouth** Even if ex is difficult, don't trash them to children.
- 6. Support children's relationship with ex** Unless there's abuse, support children loving both parents.
- 7. Set boundaries** Ex is not part of your new family. Respectful, but boundaried.

Not Using Children as Emotional Support Against Your Spouse

This is one of the most damaging co-dependent patterns—and one of the most common.

What This Looks Like

- 1. Complaining about your spouse to your children** "Your father never helps around the house." "Your mother is so controlling." "Daddy doesn't care about us, he just works all the time."
- 2. Seeking validation from children** "You think I'm right, don't you?" "Am I being unreasonable?" "Do you think I'm a good mom?"
- 3. Making children choose sides** "Who do you think is right, me or Dad?" "Whose side are you on?"
- 4. Creating "us vs. them" dynamics** "Well, it's you and me against your dad." "We know how Mom gets."
- 5. Using children as confidants** Sharing marriage problems, sexual issues, financial conflicts, infidelity, divorce considerations.

6. Seeking comfort from children "Mommy needs a hug, Daddy made me sad." "Come comfort me, your dad was mean."

7. Making them messengers "Go tell your father I'm not talking to him." "Ask your mom why she's being like this."

The Damage This Does

When you use children as emotional support against your spouse:

Children feel:

- Anxious and insecure
- Caught in the middle
- Responsible for parents' happiness
- Guilty about loving both parents
- Burdened by adult problems
- Parentified (having to be the adult)

Children learn:

- To triangulate (play people against each other)
- To manipulate
- That marriage is terrible
- That they're responsible for others' emotions
- That there's no unified authority
- To not trust the stability of family

Long-term effects:

- Anxiety and depression
- Difficulty with trust in relationships
- People-pleasing

- Boundary issues
- Relationship difficulties
- Parentification issues

This is serious damage. Stop doing this.

What to Do Instead

1. Process with appropriate people

Marriage problems should be processed with:

- Your spouse (when appropriate)
- A therapist
- A trusted friend
- A support group
- A pastor/counselor

Not with:

- Your children
- At any age

2. Present unity even when you disagree

Children don't need to know you disagreed. They need to see the final decision as unified.

"Dad and I decided..." "Mom and I agree..."

3. Speak respectfully about your spouse

Even when frustrated, speak respectfully in front of children.

"Your dad and I see this differently."

Not: "Your father is such an idiot."

4. Keep marriage problems private

Don't fight in front of children. Don't share marriage struggles with them.

5. Get your emotional needs met appropriately

Adults meet emotional needs with other adults, not with children.

6. Protect their relationship with the other parent

Don't interfere with or damage their bond with your spouse.

What If Your Spouse Does This?

If your spouse uses children as emotional support:

1. Address it privately "When you complain to the kids about me, it puts them in the middle. Please stop."

2. Reassure children "I know mom/dad said XYZ. That's between me and them. You don't need to worry about it."

3. Set boundaries "Our marriage problems are between us. Kids shouldn't be involved."

4. Get help If your spouse won't stop, get couples therapy.

5. Protect children where possible Counteract the damage by maintaining your relationship with them and not engaging in the pattern yourself.

Creating Unified Parenting Values

One of the most powerful things you can do as co-parents: create unified parenting values.

Why This Matters

When you have clear, shared values:

- You disagree less often (because you're working from same foundation)
- You can make decisions more quickly (referring to shared values)
- You present a united front more easily

- Children have clear expectations
- Your family has identity and direction

How to Create Shared Parenting Values

1. Schedule a parenting meeting

Set aside dedicated time (not just in passing).

2. Each parent lists their top values

What matters most to you in raising children?

Examples:

- Faith
- Character
- Independence
- Education
- Kindness
- Respect
- Hard work
- Creativity
- Critical thinking
- Resilience
- Family connection

3. Share and discuss

"Here's what matters most to me and why." Listen to understand, not to argue.

4. Find common ground

What values do you both share? Start there.

5. Negotiate the rest

For values that differ, discuss:

- Can we both support this even if it's not our top priority?
- Can we find a version of this we both agree on?
- Is this negotiable or non-negotiable?

6. Write them down

Create a family values statement. Literally write it down.

Example: "In our family, we value:

1. Faith in God and growing in relationship with Him
2. Respect for ourselves and others
3. Independence and taking responsibility
4. Kindness and compassion
5. Hard work and perseverance"

7. Use these as your guide

When making parenting decisions, refer back to these values.

"According to our values, how should we handle this?"

8. Revisit annually

As children grow, your parenting may need to adapt. Check in on your values.

Regular Parenting Check-Ins

Don't wait for problems to discuss parenting. Have regular check-ins.

Weekly Quick Check-In

15-20 minutes, once per week:

Discuss:

- How's each child doing?
- Any issues coming up this week?
- Any decisions we need to make?
- Are we on the same page?
- Quick planning for the week ahead

This prevents:

- Surprises
- Undermining
- Missed communication
- Disconnection

Monthly Deeper Dive

1 hour, once per month:

Discuss:

- Each child's development, struggles, victories
- Are we parenting according to our values?
- Any patterns we're concerned about?
- Any changes we need to make?
- How's our teamwork?
- How's our marriage?
- Are we presenting a united front?

Annual Big Picture

2-3 hours, once per year:

Discuss:

- Review family values—still accurate?
- How's each child progressing?
- What's working in our parenting?
- What needs to change?
- Goals for this year
- How are we doing as a couple?
- Long-term vision for family

The Structure

During parenting check-ins:

- 1. No blame** This isn't about pointing fingers. It's about working together.
- 2. Listen first** Really hear each other before responding.
- 3. Focus on solutions** Not just problems—what will we do differently?
- 4. Write it down** Keep notes of agreements, decisions, goals.
- 5. Follow through** Actually implement what you decided.
- 6. Circle back** Next check-in, review: did we do what we said?

Addressing Triangulation

Triangulation is when a third person is pulled into a two-person conflict. In families, this often means children are pulled into parental conflicts.

What Triangulation Looks Like

Children are triangulated when:

- 1. They're used as messengers** "Tell your mother I said..."
- 2. They're asked to take sides** "Who do you agree with, me or Dad?"
- 3. They're used as spies** "What did your dad say about me?"

4. They're made confidants Parent shares about conflict with other parent

5. They're put in loyalty binds "If you loved me, you'd..."

6. They're used as weapons "I'll tell your dad what you did."

7. Parents compete for their affection Each trying to be the favorite, undermining the other

The Damage of Triangulation

Triangulated children:

- Feel constant anxiety
- Feel responsible for parents' relationship
- Learn to manipulate
- Can't trust either parent fully
- Feel guilty about loyalty to either parent
- Develop people-pleasing tendencies
- Have difficulty with direct communication in their own relationships

This is serious damage. If you're doing this, stop.

De-Triangulating

1. Keep children out of your conflicts

Marital conflicts are between spouses. Period.

2. Don't make them messengers

Communicate directly with your spouse.

3. Don't ask them to take sides

"This is between me and Mom. You don't need to choose."

4. Don't compete for their affection

Your children can love both of you. That's good and healthy.

5. Present unity

Even when you disagree, show children you're a team.

6. Apologize if you've triangulated

"I'm sorry I put you in the middle. That wasn't fair. Your relationship with dad is separate from my relationship with him."

Co-Parenting With an Ex

For divorced or separated parents, co-parenting without co-dependency requires extra intentionality.

Healthy Co-Parenting With an Ex

1. Keep it about the children

Communications should be:

- Focused on children's needs
- Factual, not emotional
- Respectful or at least neutral
- Brief and clear

2. Don't use children as messengers

Don't: "Tell your dad he owes me child support." "Ask your mom why she's late again."

Do: Text, email, or call the ex directly. Keep children out of it.

3. Don't bad-mouth the ex

No matter how justified you feel, don't trash your ex to your children.

Children need:

- To love both parents without guilt

- To form their own opinions over time
- To not carry your anger or hurt

4. Parallel parenting when necessary

If you can't co-parent cooperatively because the ex is too difficult:

Parallel parenting:

- Minimal communication
- Stick to parenting plan/court order
- Each household has its own rules
- No trying to control the other household
- Business-like interaction only

5. Use tools for communication

For high-conflict situations:

- Co-parenting apps (OurFamilyWizard, Talking Parents)
- Email only (creates written record)
- Communication notebook
- Communicate through attorneys if necessary

6. Focus on what you can control

You can control:

- Your household
- Your relationship with your children
- Your behavior and responses
- Your healing and growth

You cannot control:

- Your ex's household
- Your ex's parenting
- Your ex's behavior
- Your ex's relationship with children

Let go of what you can't control.

7. Don't create loyalty conflicts

Don't make children feel they have to choose between parents.

8. Support their relationship with the other parent

Unless there's abuse or serious harm, support children's relationship with your ex.

"I hope you have a good time at Dad's this weekend."

Not: "I guess you're choosing him again."

9. Follow legal agreements

Even when you disagree, follow custody agreements and court orders.

10. Work on your own healing

Your healing from the divorce/separation is your responsibility. Get therapy, support, and help processing your emotions—not from your children.

The Freedom of Partnership

Let me end with a vision of what's possible when you co-parent from partnership rather than from co-dependent patterns.

When Parents Are a Team

Children experience:

- Security: "My parents are solid. I can trust them."
- Clear expectations: "I know the rules because they're consistent."

- Respect for authority: "I can't play them against each other."
- Model of healthy relationships: "This is what partnership looks like."
- Freedom to be children: "I don't have to take care of my parents or be in the middle."

Parents experience:

- Support: "I'm not alone in this."
- Shared load: "We're in this together."
- Trust: "I can count on my partner."
- United purpose: "We're working toward the same goals."
- Deeper marriage: "We're partners, not competitors."

The family experiences:

- Stability
- Security
- Healthy dynamics
- Clear structure
- Peace

The Long-Term Impact

20 years from now:

Your now-adult children know how to:

- Work in partnership with others
- Disagree respectfully and find compromise
- Present a united front in their own parenting
- Maintain their marriage as primary while properly caring for children

- Communicate directly rather than triangulating
- Keep appropriate boundaries

Because you modeled it for them.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- If married/partnered, that relationship is primary—not the children
- Disagreeing is normal; how you handle disagreement matters (privately, respectfully, with compromise)
- When one parent is co-dependent and the other isn't, start by changing yourself
- Single parents must build adult support systems and maintain appropriate boundaries with children
- Blended families need clear roles, unified values, and respect for all relationships
- Never use children as emotional support against your spouse or ex
- Creating unified parenting values and having regular check-ins prevents disconnection and conflict
- Triangulation damages children—keep them out of adult conflicts

Remember: Your children are safer when you parent from partnership, not from co-dependent patterns. Marriage/partnership is the primary relationship. Children need to see you as a team, not as competitors.

Action Steps This Week:

1. If partnered: Schedule a weekly parenting check-in
2. Create or review your family values statement together

3. Identify any areas where you're undermining each other and commit to discussing privately instead
 4. If you've been using children as emotional support, apologize and stop
 5. Examine: Is your marriage/partnership the primary relationship, or have children taken that place?
-

Reflection Questions:

1. Is your marriage/partnership your primary relationship, or have children taken that place? What needs to change?
 2. How do you handle disagreements about parenting? Do you disagree privately and present unity, or do you undermine each other?
 3. Have you been using your children as emotional support, confidants, or messengers? How can you stop?
 4. If single: Do you have adequate adult support systems, or are you leaning on your children for emotional support?
 5. What family values do you want to define and commit to? Have you and your co-parent discussed these?
 6. Are there areas where you're triangulating your children into adult conflicts?
-

Prayer for Co-Parenting:

Father, help us be a team. If I'm married/partnered, help me prioritize that relationship and parent from unity rather than competition. If I'm single, help me build appropriate adult support systems so I'm not leaning on my children for emotional needs. Teach us to disagree privately and present unity publicly. Help us stop using our children as emotional support, messengers, or confidants. Convict us when we're triangulating them into our conflicts. Give

us wisdom to create shared parenting values. Help us have regular check-ins to stay connected and aligned. If we're co-parenting with an ex, help us keep communication focused on the children and respectful. Protect our children from being caught in the middle. Help us model healthy partnership, direct communication, and appropriate boundaries. Give us humility to apologize when we've made children feel responsible for our emotions or our relationship. Help us remember: our children need us to be a team more than they need either of our individual approaches to "win." In Jesus' name, Amen.

"But from the beginning of creation, God made them male and female. For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother, and the two shall become one flesh; so they are no longer two, but one flesh."

—Mark 10:7-8 (NASB)

"Be subject to one another in the fear of Christ."

—Ephesians 5:21 (NASB)

"Love is patient, love is kind and is not jealous; love does not brag and is not arrogant, does not act unbecomingly; it does not seek its own, is not provoked, does not take into account a wrong suffered."

—1 Corinthians 13:4-5 (NASB)

CHAPTER 15

Community Matters: Raising Children with a Village

"Iron sharpens iron, so one man sharpens another."

—Proverbs 27:17 (NASB)

Jennifer sat in her living room surrounded by other moms from her church small group. They were discussing the challenges of parenting teenagers, and Jennifer felt a knot forming in her stomach.

"My daughter has been talking to Mrs. Anderson at church," one mom said. "She helps with the youth group, and honestly, sometimes I think Kayla tells her things she doesn't tell me. At first I was offended, but then I realized—she needs other godly women in her life. Mrs. Anderson isn't replacing me; she's supplementing what I do."

Another mom nodded. "Our son has a mentor through the church. They meet weekly. My husband was hesitant at first—like, 'I'm his father, why does he need someone else?' But it's been amazing. Sometimes boys need to hear the same things from different voices."

Jennifer felt defensive. "But don't you worry about what these other people are telling your kids? What if they contradict you? What if they give bad advice?"

The first mom looked at her thoughtfully. "We chose these people carefully. They share our values. And honestly? Sometimes my daughter needs to hear truth from someone other than me. When Mrs. Anderson tells her something, Kayla listens differently than when I say the exact same thing. That's not a threat to me—it's a gift."

"Plus," another mom added, "we can't be everything to our kids. I can't be the only adult voice in their lives. That's too much pressure on me and too limiting for them."

Jennifer went home troubled. She'd been homeschooling her three kids for years, had carefully curated their friendships, limited their interactions with other adults, and essentially created a bubble where she controlled all the influences in their lives. She told herself it was protection. It was being a good mother. It was keeping them safe from bad influences.

But sitting with those other moms, she'd felt something she hadn't expected: loneliness. Not just her own loneliness—though she was lonely, having cut herself off from meaningful community—but her children's loneliness. They had her and only her. And she had them and only them.

That night, her 14-year-old son said something that pierced her heart: "Mom, why don't we have people over? Why don't I have anyone to talk to except you?"

"You have me," she said defensively. "I'm here for you."

"But that's not the same as having a mentor or a youth leader or friends' parents who care about me. Everyone else at church has people. We just have... us."

Jennifer lay awake that night, wrestling with the question: Had she been protecting her children from bad influences, or controlling them and isolating them because of her own fear? Had she been creating a healthy family, or a co-dependent bubble where no one had relationships outside the family unit?

The next week, she called Mrs. Anderson. "My son needs a mentor. And honestly, I need community. I think I've been trying to be everything to my kids, and it's not working. Can we talk about how to do this better?"

Mrs. Anderson smiled warmly. "I'd love to. You know the saying 'it takes a village to raise a child'? It's true. But you get to choose your village. Let's talk about building a healthy community around your family."

This chapter addresses a crucial aspect of healthy parenting: **You weren't meant to parent alone. Children need a community of healthy adults, not just parents. And parents need a community of support.**

But co-dependent parents often struggle with community in one of two extremes:

Extreme 1: Isolation and control Fearful of outside influences, these parents severely limit their children's interactions with other adults, create a family bubble, and try to be everything to their children. This creates an unhealthy insularity and prevents children from developing broader relationships.

Extreme 2: Outsourcing and abdication Exhausted and overwhelmed, these parents hand their children off to every available program, activity, or other adult, essentially outsourcing the parenting role. This creates absence where presence is needed.

The healthy middle ground: Building a carefully chosen community that supports your parenting, provides additional positive influences for your children, and gives both parents and children the relationships they need to thrive—while maintaining appropriate parental authority and involvement.

This chapter will show you how to build that village wisely.

You Weren't Meant to Parent Alone

Let's start with a foundational truth: **The isolated nuclear family—parents raising children with no broader community support—is historically unusual and unhealthy.**

The Biblical Model of Community

Throughout Scripture, we see community as central to life and faith:

"Two are better than one because they have a good return for their labor. For if either of them falls, the one will lift up his companion. But woe to the one who falls when there is not another to lift him up."

—Ecclesiastes 4:9-10 (NASB)

"And let us consider how to stimulate one another to love and good deeds, not forsaking our own assembling together, as is the habit of some, but encouraging one another; and all the more as you see the day drawing near."
—Hebrews 10:24-25 (NASB)

In biblical times:

- Extended family lived together or nearby
- Communities raised children collectively
- Multiple adults had input and influence
- Children learned from parents, grandparents, aunts, uncles, community elders
- Parents had support from community in the hard work of parenting

The model was never: Isolated parents doing everything alone.

The model was: Community of believers raising the next generation together.

Why We Need Community

Parents need community because:

- 1. You can't be everything to your children** No single parent (or even two parents) can provide all the perspectives, skills, wisdom, and relationships children need.
- 2. You need perspective** Other parents and trusted adults can see things you can't see about your children or your parenting.
- 3. You need support** Parenting is hard. You need people who understand, who can help, who can give you breaks.
- 4. You need accountability** Left to yourself, you can drift into unhealthy patterns. Community provides healthy accountability.
- 5. You need rest** You can't be "on" 24/7. Community allows for breaks, respite, and restoration.

Children need community because:

- 1. They need multiple positive adult relationships** Different adults bring different gifts, perspectives, and relationships that enrich children's lives.
- 2. They need to see that other adults share your values** When children hear the same truths from multiple trusted adults, it reinforces the message.
- 3. They need adults who aren't their parents** Sometimes children can hear things from others that they can't hear from parents. This is normal and healthy.
- 4. They need to practice relationships** Learning to relate to various adults prepares them for adult life.
- 5. They need a broader support system** If something happens to you, who will your children turn to? They need a network, not just you.

The Myth of Self-Sufficiency

American culture glorifies independence and self-sufficiency: "I can do this myself. I don't need anyone."

This is not biblical. This is not healthy. This is not reality.

"Bearing with one another, and forgiving each other, whoever has a complaint against anyone; just as the Lord forgave you, so also should you."

—Colossians 3:13 (NASB)

We're designed to need each other. The body of Christ functions through interdependence, not independence.

When parents try to be self-sufficient:

- They become isolated and exhausted
- Children have no models of healthy community
- The family becomes insular and potentially unhealthy
- No one has outside perspective

- Parents have no accountability
- Children have no safety net beyond parents

This isn't strength. It's dangerous isolation.

Your Fears About Community

Co-dependent parents often fear community because:

- 1. Loss of control** "What if other adults influence my children in ways I don't like?"
- 2. Judgment** "What if people see our struggles and judge my parenting?"
- 3. Vulnerability** "What if I let people in and they hurt us?"
- 4. Competition** "What if my kids like other adults better than me?"
- 5. Threat to identity** "If I'm not everything to my children, who am I?"

These fears are understandable. But they shouldn't drive you into isolation.

Healthy Community vs. Outsourcing Parenting

There's a crucial distinction between healthy community involvement and abdicating your parental role.

Healthy Community Looks Like

- 1. You're still the primary influence** Other adults supplement, not replace, your role.
- 2. You choose the community** You're selective about who has influence in your children's lives.
- 3. You maintain involvement** You know who your children spend time with, what they're learning, where they are.
- 4. Shared values** The adults in your community share your core values and faith.

5. Communication You have open communication with the other adults involved in your children's lives.

6. Age-appropriate freedom As children mature, they have increasing freedom within the trusted community.

7. Balance Children have outside influences AND significant family time.

8. You're supported, not replaced Community helps you parent better; it doesn't parent for you.

Outsourcing Looks Like

1. Constant activity Children are always at activities, rarely home, barely see parents.

2. Minimal involvement You drop them off but don't know what happens, who's involved, what they're learning.

3. Using programs as babysitting Activities are primarily about keeping kids busy or giving you a break, not about their development.

4. Lack of family time Schedule is so packed with outside activities that there's no family dinner, family time, or meaningful connection.

5. Abdicating authority "The coach/teacher/youth leader will handle it" instead of you parenting.

6. Using community to avoid parenting Sending them elsewhere because you don't want to deal with them.

7. No vetting You haven't carefully chosen who has influence; you've just handed them off to whoever is available.

The Balance

Ask yourself:

- Am I building community that supports my parenting, or am I outsourcing parenting to the community?

- Do I know the adults who have influence in my children's lives?
- Is my child's schedule so full that we have no family time?
- Am I using activities to avoid spending time with my children?
- Am I maintaining appropriate involvement and authority?

Healthy community enhances family. Outsourcing replaces it.

The Framework

For each activity, relationship, or program:

Ask:

1. Does this align with our family values?
2. Do I trust the adults involved?
3. Will this benefit my child's development?
4. Does this leave time for family connection?
5. Am I maintaining appropriate involvement?
6. Is this supporting my parenting or replacing it?

If you answer yes to 1-5 and "supporting" to #6: This is healthy community.

If you're using it primarily to avoid parenting or have no family time left:
This is outsourcing.

Allowing Other Adults to Influence Your Children

One of the hardest things for co-dependent parents: allowing other adults to have meaningful influence in your children's lives.

Why This Is Hard

Co-dependent parents struggle with this because:

1. It feels like a threat "If my child bonds with another adult, what does that say about me?"

2. It means loss of control "I can't control what this person tells my child."

3. It requires trust "What if this person hurts my child or teaches them something I disagree with?"

4. It challenges your identity "If I'm not the only important adult in my child's life, who am I?"

Why It's Necessary

Children benefit from multiple healthy adult relationships because:

1. Different adults bring different gifts

- One adult might be great at teaching practical skills
- Another might be particularly wise about relationships
- Another might share a hobby or interest with your child
- Another might just "get" your child in ways you don't

All of these enrich your child's life.

2. Sometimes children can hear from others what they can't hear from parents This is normal developmental psychology. Teenagers especially need other adults to speak truth into their lives.

This doesn't mean they love you less. It means they're individuating appropriately.

3. Multiple adult relationships create resilience If something happens to you, your child has other adults they trust. This is a safety net, not a threat.

4. It models healthy community Children learn that relationships outside the nuclear family are valuable and important.

5. It prepares them for adult life Learning to relate to various authority figures and mentors prepares them for work, church, and adult relationships.

Choosing Healthy Influences

Not just any adult should have influence. You choose carefully.

Look for adults who:

- 1. Share your core values and faith** You don't need perfect agreement on everything, but core values should align.
- 2. Have character you respect** How do they live? How do they treat others? What's their reputation?
- 3. Are trustworthy** Have they proven themselves reliable and safe?
- 4. Have skills, wisdom, or gifts to offer** What do they bring to your child's life?
- 5. Respect your parental authority** They're not trying to replace you or undermine you.
- 6. Communicate appropriately** They keep you in the loop about significant issues or concerns.
- 7. Have healthy boundaries** They maintain appropriate adult-child boundaries.

Types of Healthy Adult Relationships for Children

Extended family:

- Grandparents
- Aunts and uncles
- Older cousins

Church community:

- Youth leaders
- Sunday school teachers
- Mentors
- Pastor/pastoral staff
- Other families in the church

Mentors:

- Formal mentorship programs
- Informal mentoring relationships
- Coaches
- Music teachers
- Other instructors

Friends' parents:

- Parents of your children's friends who share your values
- Can provide perspective and additional oversight

Teachers and educators:

- School teachers
- Homeschool co-op teachers
- Tutors

All of these can provide valuable influence when chosen carefully.

How to Allow Influence While Maintaining Authority

1. Be clear about your role You're the parent. Others supplement your role; they don't replace it.

2. Communicate expectations Let other adults know your values, expectations, and any specific concerns.

3. Stay involved Know what's happening in these relationships. Ask your child about their time with mentors, coaches, teachers.

4. Have regular check-ins Talk with the adults involved occasionally about how your child is doing.

5. Trust but verify Trust the people you've chosen, but stay aware of what's happening.

6. Teach your child discernment Help them learn to evaluate what they hear from various adults.

"Mr. Jones said X. What do you think about that? Does that align with what we've taught you?"

7. Address concerns quickly If you have concerns about an adult's influence, address it promptly.

8. Model gratitude Thank the adults who invest in your children. Show your children you value these relationships.

What If They Contradict You?

This will happen sometimes. Here's how to handle it:

Minor differences: "Mrs. Smith thinks you should do X. I think Y. People have different approaches. Let's talk about why we do it our way."

Major differences that violate your values: Address it with the adult directly. If it continues, that person shouldn't have influence in your child's life.

Truth your child needs to hear from someone other than you: Sometimes another adult will say something you've been saying for years, and suddenly your child hears it.

This is GOOD. Don't be jealous. Be grateful.

"I'm so glad Mr. Anderson talked to you about that. That's what I've been saying!"

Church, School, and Extracurricular Balance

Children's time and energy are finite. How do you balance various good things without over-scheduling or under-connecting?

The Competing Priorities

Good things compete for children's time:

- Church (Sunday service, youth group, small groups, serving)

- School (academic demands, homework, projects)
- Extracurriculars (sports, music, arts, clubs)
- Friends (social time, playdates, hangouts)
- Family (meals, traditions, connection time, fun)
- Rest (downtime, unstructured play, sleep)
- Chores and responsibilities

All of these have value. But you can't do everything.

The Over-Scheduled Child

Signs of over-scheduling:

- Child is constantly rushed, stressed, exhausted
- No time for family dinners
- No unstructured free time
- No time for homework without staying up late
- Constantly in the car driving to activities
- Child complains of being tired or overwhelmed
- No margin for spontaneity or rest

Effects of over-scheduling:

- Stress and anxiety
- Exhaustion
- Lack of family connection
- No time to develop independent interests
- Performance pressure
- No time to just be a kid

The Under-Connected Child

Signs of under-connection:

- Excessive screen time
- No involvement in anything beyond school
- No friends or social connections
- Isolated at home
- No opportunities to develop skills or interests
- No adult relationships outside immediate family

Effects of under-connection:

- Social isolation
- Lack of skill development
- Missing opportunities for growth
- Limited perspective
- Potential for unhealthy family dynamics

The Balance

A balanced schedule includes:

1. Regular family time

- Family dinners most nights
- Family time on weekends
- Traditions and rituals
- Unstructured time together

2. Regular church involvement

- Weekly worship

- Age-appropriate groups
- Service opportunities
- Community with other believers

3. One or two extracurriculars Not five or six. One or two activities they're genuinely interested in.

4. Social time Regular opportunities to play, hang out with friends, develop friendships.

5. Downtime Unstructured time to play, read, create, rest, be bored.

6. Responsibilities Chores, homework, family contributions.

7. Adequate sleep Children need 9-11 hours depending on age. If the schedule prevents this, it's too much.

The Framework for Decisions

When deciding about activities:

1. Does this align with our family values? Is this important for their development and our priorities?

2. Does this leave time for family? Will we still have family dinners? Weekend family time?

3. Is my child genuinely interested? Or am I pushing this for my own reasons?

4. Can we afford it? Not just financially—time, energy, family bandwidth.

5. Does this add to their life or just add stress? Will they grow from this, or will they just be busier?

6. What would we have to give up? Is the tradeoff worth it?

The Permission to Say No

You're allowed to say no to good things.

Not every opportunity needs to be seized. Not every invitation accepted. Not every program joined.

You can say:

- "We've decided to limit activities to focus on family time."
- "That sounds great, but we're already committed to other things."
- "We need to protect our family dinner time."
- "Our child is already doing [X], and we don't want to over-schedule."

Your child won't be ruined by missing opportunities. They'll be better served by a balanced, connected family life.

Church as Priority

For Christian families, church involvement should be prioritized:

*"And let us consider how to stimulate one another to love and good deeds, not forsaking our own assembling together, as is the habit of some, but encouraging one another; and all the more as you see the day drawing near."
—Hebrews 10:24-25 (NASB)*

This doesn't mean:

- Church activities every night
- No time for anything else
- Forced involvement in everything

It means:

- Regular worship is protected
- Spiritual formation is prioritized
- Christian community is valued
- Service is modeled and practiced

Balance church involvement with family time and rest.

Monitoring Without Controlling Their Friendships

One of the hardest balances: allowing children to choose friends while maintaining appropriate oversight.

The Co-Dependent Extremes

Extreme 1: Controlling all friendships

- You choose all their friends
- You curate every interaction
- You prevent friendships you don't approve of
- You monitor every conversation
- They have no freedom to develop friendships independently

Effect: Children don't learn to choose friends wisely. They may rebel against your control. They don't develop independent relationship skills.

Extreme 2: No involvement at all

- You have no idea who their friends are
- You don't know parents of friends
- You don't monitor their social interactions at all
- They have complete freedom with no guidance

Effect: Children may make poor friendship choices. They're vulnerable to negative influences. They miss your guidance and wisdom.

The Healthy Middle Ground

Monitoring without controlling looks like:

1. Know who their friends are

- Names, families, basic information
- What they do together

- Where they spend time

2. Know the parents

- At minimum, have met them
- Ideally, have some relationship or communication
- Know their values generally align with yours

3. Set clear boundaries

- Where they can go
- What activities are acceptable
- Check-in expectations
- Technology rules

4. Have conversations about friendships

- "What do you like about this friend?"
- "How do you feel when you're with them?"
- "Do they bring out the best in you?"

5. Teach friendship skills and discernment

- How to choose good friends
- How to recognize unhealthy relationships
- How to be a good friend
- How to handle conflict

6. Allow age-appropriate freedom

- Young children: You arrange most social time
- Elementary: Some choice within your oversight
- Tweens: Increasing freedom with check-ins

- Teens: Significant freedom with guardrails

7. Intervene when necessary If a friendship is clearly harmful, you intervene. But this should be rare, not constant.

Red Flags in Friendships

When should you be concerned:

Behavioral changes:

- Your child acts differently (worse) around this friend
- Secretiveness about the friendship
- Lying about where they are or what they're doing
- Decline in grades, attitude, or character

Concerning friend behavior:

- Disrespect toward adults
- Encouragement of risky or harmful behavior
- Manipulative or mean behavior
- Influence toward values contrary to yours

Your child's response:

- They're anxious or stressed about the friendship
- They're being bullied or mistreated
- They're being pressured to do things they're uncomfortable with

When these exist, you intervene with conversations, boundaries, or ending the friendship if necessary.

Teaching Friendship Discernment

Rather than controlling, teach them to evaluate:

"What makes a good friend?"

- Kindness
- Trustworthiness
- Shared values
- Brings out the best in you
- Mutual respect
- Fun and positive

"What are signs of an unhealthy friendship?"

- Feeling worse about yourself
- Being pressured to do things you don't want to do
- One-sided (you do all the giving)
- Drama and manipulation
- Disrespect
- Secrecy and lying

"How do you handle friendship challenges?"

- Direct communication
- Setting boundaries
- Asking for help when needed
- Walking away when necessary

Teach them, then trust them to practice.

Age-Appropriate Friendship Autonomy

Preschool/Early Elementary (Ages 4-7):

- You arrange most social time
- You're present during playdates

- You know all their friends and families
- Minimal independence

Late Elementary (Ages 8-11):

- Some choice in friends
- Increasing independent playtime (still supervised)
- You know friends and families but aren't always present
- Beginning to navigate friendships independently

Middle School (Ages 12-14):

- Significant choice in friends
- More independence in social time
- You know friends and parents but aren't monitoring constantly
- They're learning to manage relationships with your guidance

High School (Ages 15-18):

- Nearly full autonomy in friend choice
- You know who they're with but aren't managing their social life
- They handle their own friendships
- You're available for guidance when asked

Gradually release control as they demonstrate good judgment.

Building a Support Network for Yourself

You can't pour from an empty cup. Parents need community too.

Why Parents Need Community

You need:

- 1. Other parents who understand** People who get the challenges and joys of parenting.
- 2. Perspective** Other adults can see things you can't see about your parenting or your children.
- 3. Support during hard times** Who's there when your child is struggling? When you're overwhelmed? When you need help?
- 4. Accountability** People who can gently point out when you're off track.
- 5. Friendship** Relationships that aren't just about parenting.
- 6. Wisdom** Learning from others who are ahead of you or going through similar things.
- 7. Practical help** Childcare swaps, meal trains, carpooling, emergency backup.

Types of Parent Support

- 1. Parent friends with similar-age children** People in the trenches with you.
- 2. Parents further ahead** Wisdom from those who've been where you are.
- 3. Church small group or community** Regular connection with believers.
- 4. Formal support groups** Parenting groups, special needs support, single parent groups.
- 5. Extended family** If healthy and available.
- 6. Professional support** Therapists, counselors, coaches when needed.

How to Build Parent Community

- 1. Be intentional** It won't happen accidentally. You have to pursue it.
- 2. Show up consistently** Church, school events, activities—be present and connect.
- 3. Invite people in** Have families over. Host playdates. Create opportunities for connection.

4. Be vulnerable Share your struggles (appropriately). This creates real connection.

5. Offer help Be the friend you want to have. Offer to help others.

6. Join groups Parenting groups, MOPS, church groups, neighborhood groups.

7. Use transitions New school year, new church, new neighborhood—these are opportunities to build community.

What If You Don't Have Community?

If you're isolated:

Start small:

- One family to connect with
- One mom friend
- One church small group
- One regular commitment

Put yourself in places where community exists:

- Regular church attendance
- School volunteer opportunities
- Neighborhood events
- Extracurricular activities where parents gather

Be patient: Building community takes time. Keep showing up.

Address barriers:

- Social anxiety? Get help for it, but still show up.
- Past hurt? Process it in therapy, but don't let it keep you isolated.
- Pride? Humble yourself and admit you need people.
- Perfectionism? Let go of needing to look perfect.

Creating Community Boundaries

Healthy community requires healthy boundaries.

Boundaries You Need

1. Privacy boundaries Not everyone needs to know everything about your family.

What to share:

- General struggles and joys
- Prayer requests
- Age-appropriate information about children

What not to share:

- Deeply personal family information
- Children's private struggles (unless necessary)
- Marriage conflicts (except with appropriate people)
- Information that violates children's privacy

2. Time boundaries Community is important, but so is family time.

Protect:

- Family dinners
- Sabbath rest
- Couple time
- One-on-one time with children

Be willing to say:

- "We can't make that work with our schedule."
- "We need to keep that night for family time."

3. Authority boundaries Other adults can have input, but you make final decisions.

Welcome:

- Advice and perspective
- Concerns raised respectfully
- Support and encouragement

Don't accept:

- Undermining your authority
- Overstepping their role
- Disrespect or judgment

4. Safety boundaries Not everyone gets access to your children.

Vet people carefully:

- Background checks for formal roles (coaches, teachers, etc.)
- Knowing someone's character before allowing influence
- Teaching children about safe vs. unsafe adults
- Clear guidelines about who can be alone with children

Teaching Your Children to Recognize Safe Adults

As children interact with more adults, they need to learn discernment.

Characteristics of Safe Adults

Teach children that safe adults:

1. Respect boundaries

- Don't force physical affection
- Don't violate privacy

- Respect when kids say "no"
- Keep appropriate emotional boundaries

2. Are known and trusted by parents

- Parents have relationship with them
- Parents have approved their involvement
- They communicate with parents

3. Have appropriate behavior

- Don't ask kids to keep secrets from parents
- Don't spend time alone with children inappropriately
- Don't give special treatment that excludes others
- Don't have excessive physical contact

4. Share your values

- Respect your faith
- Support your family values
- Reinforce what parents teach

5. Point children toward parents

- Encourage children to talk to parents
- Don't replace parents
- Support parental authority

Red Flags to Teach Children

Warning signs of unsafe adults:

1. Secrecy "Don't tell your parents about this." "This is our special secret."

2. Isolation Wanting to be alone with child frequently. Creating opportunities to separate child from others.

3. Special treatment Singling out one child for gifts, attention, special privileges.

4. Boundary violations Inappropriate touching. Showing inappropriate content. Asking inappropriate questions.

5. Grooming behaviors Building special relationship while gradually testing boundaries.

Teach children: "If an adult makes you uncomfortable or asks you to keep secrets from mom/dad, tell us immediately. You won't be in trouble."

Empowering Children

Teach them:

1. They can say "no" to adults Even adults they know. Even in church. Even family members.

"I don't want a hug." "I'm not comfortable with this."

2. They should trust their instincts "If something feels wrong, it probably is. Tell us."

3. There are no secrets from parents "You can tell us anything. No adult should ask you to keep secrets."

4. They have autonomy over their bodies No forced affection. No adults should touch them inappropriately.

5. Parents will believe and protect them "If someone hurts you or makes you uncomfortable, tell us. We'll handle it."

Balancing Community Input With Your Authority

The final balance: welcoming input while maintaining appropriate authority.

Welcoming Input

Healthy community means:

- 1. Being open to perspective** "Mrs. Johnson mentioned she's concerned about Sarah. Let's talk about it."
- 2. Receiving advice humbly** "I hadn't thought of it that way. That's helpful."
- 3. Considering feedback** "The teacher said our son is struggling socially. We should address that."
- 4. Being willing to learn** "Other parents have suggestions that might help. I'm open to learning."
- 5. Acknowledging you don't have all the answers** "I don't know the best way to handle this. Who can we ask?"

Maintaining Authority

While being open, you also:

- 1. Make final decisions** Community can advise, but you decide.
- 2. Know your child best** Trust your knowledge of your specific child.
- 3. Filter advice through your values** Not all advice fits your family.
- 4. Set and enforce boundaries** You determine what's appropriate for your family.
- 5. Parent according to your convictions** Not just following what everyone else does.

The Balance Statement

You can say: "I appreciate your input. We'll consider it and decide what's best for our family."

This communicates:

- You value their perspective
- You're the decision-maker

- You're thoughtful about your choices
- You're not defensive

When Community Oversteps

If someone oversteps boundaries:

1. Address it directly "I appreciate your concern, but we've decided to handle this differently."

2. Restate boundaries "We make the decisions about our children. We're open to input, but we'll decide."

3. Limit access if necessary If someone can't respect your authority, they shouldn't have influence.

4. Be gracious but firm You can be kind while maintaining boundaries.

The Freedom of Village

Let me end with a vision of what's possible when you build healthy community.

When You Parent With a Village

You experience:

- Support during hard times
- Wisdom from others who've been there
- Practical help when you need it
- Perspective you couldn't see alone
- Accountability that keeps you healthy
- Friendship and connection
- Shared joy in children's growth
- Rest, knowing you're not alone

Your children experience:

- Multiple healthy adult relationships
- Additional positive influences
- Reinforcement of values from multiple voices
- Adults who care about them
- Skills and wisdom from various mentors
- Safety net of community
- Model of healthy community
- Preparation for adult relationships

Your family experiences:

- Connection to something bigger
- Support through seasons
- Shared celebrations and sorrows
- Balance of family and community
- Rich, multi-layered relationships
- Security and stability

The Long-Term Impact**20 years from now:**

Your now-adult children know how to:

- Build healthy community
- Allow others to have influence in their lives
- Give and receive help
- Evaluate relationships and people wisely

- Balance autonomy and community
- Raise their own children with a village

Because you modeled it for them.

They remember not just you, but a community of adults who invested in them, who cared about them, who shaped them. They remember that faith and family happen in community, not in isolation.

And you? You have deep friendships with people who walked through parenting alongside you. You have community that extends beyond your children. You have the richness of relationships built over years of doing life together.

This is the gift of village.

"Iron sharpens iron, so one man sharpens another."
—Proverbs 27:17 (NASB)

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- You weren't meant to parent alone—biblical model includes community
- Healthy community supports your parenting; outsourcing replaces it
- Children benefit from multiple healthy adult relationships
- Balance church, school, extracurriculars, and family time carefully
- Monitor children's friendships without controlling them
- Parents need community for support, perspective, and accountability
- Create boundaries while welcoming community
- Teach children to recognize safe adults
- Welcome input while maintaining parental authority

Remember: It takes a village to raise a child—but you choose the village wisely. Community enhances healthy parenting; it doesn't replace it. You need support, and your children need multiple positive adult influences.

Action Steps This Week:

1. Identify 2-3 trusted adults who could have positive influence in your children's lives
 2. Evaluate your family's schedule—are you over-scheduled, under-connected, or balanced?
 3. Reach out to one parent for coffee or connection
 4. Have a conversation with your children about recognizing safe adults
 5. Thank one adult who has positively influenced your child
-

Reflection Questions:

1. Are you trying to parent in isolation, or do you have healthy community? What needs to change?
 2. Do you struggle more with controlling all influences (fear-based isolation) or outsourcing parenting (checking out)?
 3. Who are the trusted adults in your children's lives? Are there enough? Too many? The right ones?
 4. Is your family's schedule balanced? Do you have time for family connection, or are you constantly busy?
 5. How do you handle your children's friendships? Do you control, ignore, or guide with appropriate involvement?
 6. What community support do YOU need? What's one step you can take toward building that?
-

Prayer for Community:

Father, I confess I've tried to do this alone. Either I've isolated out of fear, or I've outsourced out of exhaustion. Help me find the healthy middle ground. Show me who should be part of our village—the trusted adults who can have positive influence in my children's lives. Give me wisdom to choose carefully and the humility to welcome input. Help me release control enough to allow others to speak into my children's lives, trusting that You've placed these people in our path. At the same time, help me maintain appropriate authority and involvement. Give me discernment about people and situations. Protect my children from unsafe adults, and help me teach them to recognize safety and danger. Help me build community for myself—parent friends who understand, people who can support and encourage me, accountability that keeps me healthy. Break down the pride, fear, and perfectionism that keep me isolated. Give me courage to be vulnerable, to ask for help, to let people in. Help our family find balance between community involvement and family time. Teach us to be part of the body of Christ, giving and receiving, supporting and being supported. Thank You for the gift of community. Help me build it wisely. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"Iron sharpens iron, so one man sharpens another."

—Proverbs 27:17 (NASB)

"Two are better than one because they have a good return for their labor. For if either of them falls, the one will lift up his companion."

—Ecclesiastes 4:9-10 (NASB)

"And let us consider how to stimulate one another to love and good deeds, not forsaking our own assembling together, as is the habit of some, but encouraging one another."

—Hebrews 10:24-25 (NASB)

CHAPTER 16

The Long View: Launching Them into Their Own Story

"Trust in the Lord with all your heart and do not lean on your own understanding. In all your ways acknowledge Him, and He will make your paths straight."

—Proverbs 3:5-6 (NASB)

Margaret sat on her daughter's college dorm bed, tears streaming down her face. Sarah, now 18, was unpacking boxes, excited about her freshman year, making plans with her new roommate.

Margaret had dreamed of this day. Hadn't she? All those years of parenting had been building toward this—launching Sarah into adulthood, independence, her own life.

So why did it feel like her heart was being ripped out?

"Mom, are you crying?" Sarah asked, noticing.

Margaret wiped her eyes quickly. "Just emotional. I'm so proud of you."

But that wasn't the whole truth. The truth was more complicated: she was proud. And terrified. And grieving. And feeling like she was losing her purpose. For 18 years, being Sarah's mom had been her identity. She'd organized Sarah's life, managed her schedule, made her decisions, been her constant companion.

And now? Now Sarah was supposed to just... leave? Make her own decisions? Live her own life?

Who was Margaret without Sarah to take care of?

The drive home was quiet. Margaret's husband, Tom, finally broke the silence. "You okay?"

"I don't know how to not be her mom," Margaret said quietly.

"You'll always be her mom."

"But what does that mean now? I can't manage her schedule. I can't make her decisions. I can't protect her from everything. What's my role?"

Tom thought for a moment. "Maybe now you get to watch her story unfold instead of writing it for her."

The words hit Margaret hard. *Watch her story. Not write it.*

Was that possible? Could she step back and let Sarah have her own story—even if Margaret disagreed with some of the chapters? Even if Sarah made choices Margaret wouldn't make? Even if Sarah struggled and Margaret couldn't fix it?

Over the next few weeks, Margaret wrestled with these questions. She attended a support group for parents launching kids. She talked to her therapist. She prayed. A lot.

And slowly, she began to see: She'd been so focused on getting Sarah to adulthood that she'd never thought about what happens after. She'd been so invested in being needed that she couldn't imagine a relationship where Sarah didn't need her to function.

But here's what she was learning: **The goal of parenting isn't to be forever needed. It's to become unnecessary. And that's not failure—it's success.**

Three months into Sarah's freshman year, Margaret had a different conversation with her daughter.

"Sarah, I need to apologize to you. I've been calling too much, texting too much, trying to manage your life from a distance. That's not fair to you. You're an adult now. You get to make your own decisions. I need to trust that I've prepared you for this, and now I need to let you actually live it."

Sarah was quiet for a moment. "I was wondering when you were going to say that. I didn't want to hurt your feelings, but Mom... I need you to let me do this. I need you to trust me."

"I do trust you. I'm just learning how to show it. From now on, I'm going to back off. I'll be here when you need me. But I'm going to let you come to me instead of constantly checking on you. This is your story now. And I'm excited to watch you write it."

Sarah's voice was thick with emotion. "Thanks, Mom. I love you."

"I love you too. Now go live your life. And call me when you want to—not because I'm making you."

Margaret hung up and cried—but this time, it was different. She was grieving the end of one season but also celebrating the beginning of another. She was releasing Sarah into her own story. And that was exactly what she was supposed to do.

This final chapter addresses what might be the hardest transition for co-dependent parents: **launching your children into adulthood and learning to have an adult relationship with them rather than a parent-child relationship.**

For 18+ years, you've been the authority, the guide, the manager, the protector. And now? Now you step back. You transition from authority to advisor. You watch their story unfold rather than writing it for them.

This is the goal you've been working toward from day one. But for co-dependent parents, it can feel like death.

This chapter will help you navigate this transition with wisdom, grace, and appropriate boundaries. It will show you how to measure success not by your continued involvement, but by their freedom. It will teach you how to love them through choices you disagree with, how to maintain relationship without enmeshment, and ultimately, how to trust God with their story.

Success Is Measured by Their Freedom, Not Your Involvement

Let's start with a radical redefinition of parenting success.

The Co-Dependent Definition of Success

Co-dependent parents often measure success by:

1. How much they're needed "She calls me every day!" "He can't make a decision without me!" "They'd be lost without me!"

This feels like success but is actually failure—you've created dependence.

2. How involved they remain "I'm still doing his laundry." "I still manage her finances." "They come home every weekend."

This feels like closeness but may be enmeshment.

3. How much they agree with you "She's making all the choices I would make!" "He shares all my values!" "They're living the life I wanted for them!"

This may look like success but could mean they've never individuated.

4. How much they still include you "I know everything about their life!" "They tell me everything!" "I'm involved in all their decisions!"

This may feel like relationship but could be inappropriate enmeshment.

The Healthy Definition of Success

Healthy parenting success is measured by:

1. Their capability to function independently Can they:

- Make wise decisions?
- Manage their finances?
- Maintain relationships?
- Handle conflict?
- Solve problems?
- Navigate adult life?
- Regulate their emotions?

- Take responsibility for their choices?

If yes, you succeeded.

2. Their character and values Do they:

- Have integrity?
- Treat others well?
- Work hard?
- Take responsibility?
- Show compassion?
- Have faith in God?
- Make ethical choices?

If yes, you succeeded.

3. Their ability to have healthy relationships Can they:

- Form intimate relationships?
- Maintain friendships?
- Set appropriate boundaries?
- Communicate directly?
- Handle relationship conflict?

If yes, you succeeded.

4. Their resilience and adaptability Can they:

- Handle setbacks?
- Learn from failures?
- Adapt to change?
- Persevere through difficulty?

- Recover from disappointment?

If yes, you succeeded.

5. Their sense of identity and purpose Do they:

- Know who they are?
- Have their own interests and passions?
- Pursue meaningful work or education?
- Have direction for their life?
- Make choices aligned with their values?

If yes, you succeeded.

Notice what's NOT on this list:

- How often they call you
- How much they need your help
- How much they include you in decisions
- How similar their life is to what you wanted for them
- How much they still depend on you

The Paradox of Parenting

The paradox: The better you parent, the less they need you.

Your goal from day one has been to work yourself out of a job.

- You taught them to feed themselves so you wouldn't have to feed them forever
- You taught them to dress themselves so you wouldn't have to dress them forever
- You taught them to make decisions so you wouldn't have to make decisions forever

- You taught them to solve problems so you wouldn't have to solve problems forever

Every skill you taught was leading toward independence.

If they reach adulthood and still need you to function—you didn't succeed. You created dependence.

If they reach adulthood and CAN function but still CHOOSE to maintain a relationship with you—you succeeded.

The Shift in Thinking

Old thinking: "I hope they always need me."

New thinking: "I hope they never need me, but always want me in their life."

Old thinking: "Success is them calling me daily for advice."

New thinking: "Success is them calling me because they enjoy talking to me, not because they can't function without me."

Old thinking: "If they can do it without me, I'm not important anymore."

New thinking: "If they can do it without me, I did my job well. And now we can have an adult relationship based on choice, not need."

The Biblical Model

Scripture presents a clear progression:

"For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother, and be joined to his wife; and they shall become one flesh."

—Genesis 2:24 (NASB)

Notice: Leave father and mother.

Not: "Stay enmeshed with parents forever." Not: "Let parents control your adult life." Not: "Make parents your primary relationship."

Leave. Separate. Become your own family unit.

This is God's design. If your children can't leave (emotionally, financially, functionally) in healthy ways, something went wrong in the preparation.

Transitioning from Authority to Advisor

One of the hardest shifts: from being the decision-maker to being a consultant they can choose to use or not.

The Stages of Parental Authority

Birth to age 12: Full authority You make most decisions. You're the primary authority in their life.

Ages 13-17: Shared authority transitioning to their authority Gradually increasing their decision-making while you provide guidance, boundaries, and veto power when necessary.

Age 18+: No authority (except in your home) They make their own decisions. You have no authority over their life choices. You can advise if asked. You can set boundaries in your own home. But you cannot control their lives.

This is the hardest transition for co-dependent parents.

What "No Authority" Means

At 18+ (or when they're financially independent and living on their own):

You don't get to:

- Make their decisions
- Control their money (unless you're giving it to them)
- Tell them where to live
- Choose their career
- Approve their relationships
- Decide their schedule
- Manage their life

- Demand they do things your way

You do get to:

- Offer advice IF ASKED
- Share your perspective IF ASKED
- Set boundaries in YOUR home
- Decide what financial help YOU give
- Maintain or not maintain relationship based on their choices
- Have feelings about their choices
- Pray for them

This doesn't mean you have no influence. It means you have no control.

The Advisor Role

As an advisor, you:

1. Wait to be asked Don't offer unsolicited advice. Wait for them to ask.

Exception: If they're in genuine danger or doing something that will cause serious harm, you can speak up once. But you can't force them to listen.

2. Share perspective, don't mandate outcomes "Here's what I think about that situation..." Not: "You have to do it this way."

3. Respect their decision-making authority Even if you disagree, acknowledge it's their choice.

"I understand this is your decision. I see it differently, but I respect your right to choose."

4. Focus on questions, not answers Help them think through it rather than telling them what to do.

"Have you considered...?" "What do you think might happen if...?" "What's important to you in this decision?"

5. Provide information without pressure "Here's what I've learned about X. Do with it what you will."

6. Step back when they don't want advice If they're not asking, don't push.

The Transition Conversation

At some point (ideally before or at 18), have this conversation:

"You're an adult now. That changes our relationship. I'm no longer the decision-maker in your life. You are. I'm not going to tell you what to do or manage your life. I'm here if you want advice, but I'm going to wait for you to ask. I trust that I've prepared you for this, and now I need to let you live your own life. I'm excited to watch your story unfold. I love you, and I'm here whenever you need me—but on your terms now, not mine."

This conversation:

- Clarifies the shift
- Releases them into adulthood
- Establishes new relational dynamics
- Expresses trust and confidence

What If They Keep Asking You to Make Decisions?

If your adult child keeps asking you to make decisions for them:

Don't: Make the decisions (this perpetuates dependence).

Do: Coach them through the decision-making process.

"What are your options?" "What are the pros and cons of each?" "What's most important to you?" "What do you think you should do?" "I have confidence you can figure this out."

If they persist: "I'm not going to make this decision for you. You're an adult. I believe in your ability to decide. Let's talk through how you might approach this."

When They Make Choices You Disagree With

This will happen. Your adult children will make choices you wouldn't make.

Your response:

If it's not a moral or safety issue: "I see this differently than you do, but it's your life. I support your right to make this choice."

If it's a moral issue but they're not asking your opinion: Say nothing unless the relationship and situation warrant it. Pray. Trust God with their story.

If it's a moral issue and they ARE asking your opinion: "Since you asked, here's what I think. But this is your decision, and I'm not going to pressure you. I love you regardless of what you choose."

If it's a safety issue: "I'm concerned about your safety. Here's why. I hope you'll reconsider. I can't make you, but I needed to say this. I love you."

Then let go of the outcome.

When Adult Children Return Home—Boundaries for Boomerangs

More adult children are living with parents longer or returning home after being out. This requires clear boundaries.

Why Adult Children Return Home

Common reasons:

- Financial challenges
- Job loss or career transition
- End of relationship/divorce
- Mental health struggles
- Completing education
- Saving for house/paying off debt

- General "failure to launch"

Some of these are healthy/temporary. Some indicate deeper issues.

The Danger of No Boundaries

When adult children live at home without boundaries:

For the adult child:

- Perpetuates dependence
- Delays maturity
- Creates resentment
- Prevents them from building adult life
- Makes it too comfortable to not progress

For parents:

- Enables co-dependency
- Blurs authority lines
- Creates stress and resentment
- Prevents parents from moving into next life stage
- Difficult to end once established

Healthy Boundaries for Adult Children at Home

Before they move in, establish:

1. The purpose and timeline WHY are they moving home? WHAT is the goal?
HOW LONG will this last?

Have a specific goal:

- "You're here to save money for six months for a down payment"
- "You're here for three months while you job hunt"

- "You're here for a year while you complete your degree"

Not: "You can live here indefinitely with no plan."

2. Financial expectations

Determine:

- Do they pay rent? (even nominal rent creates accountability)
- Do they pay for their own food/expenses?
- Do they contribute to household bills?
- What expenses will you cover? Won't cover?

My recommendation: They should pay something, even if it's nominal. This maintains adult-adult dynamic.

3. Household responsibilities

They should:

- Do their own laundry
- Clean their own space
- Contribute to household chores
- Help with cooking/cleaning
- Maintain their belongings

You should not: Do their laundry, clean their room, cook for them daily like they're 12.

4. Rules and expectations

Establish:

- Curfew (if any—they're adults, but it's your house)
- Guests policy
- Substance use rules

- Noise expectations
- Shared space usage

Remember: They're adults, but it's your home. You can have rules.

5. Work/progress expectations

Require:

- Actively working OR
- Actively job hunting OR
- Actively in school OR
- Making measurable progress toward stated goal

Not acceptable: Living at home playing video games with no forward movement.

6. Re-evaluation timeline

Schedule regular check-ins:

- Monthly: How's progress toward goal?
- Quarterly: Are we on track with the timeline?
- At initial deadline: Extend, transition out, or revise plan?

7. Exit plan

Before they move in, discuss:

- What does success look like?
- What will trigger them moving out?
- What's the plan for transition?

The Contract

Put it in writing.

Seriously. Have a written agreement covering:

- Purpose and timeline
- Financial contributions
- Household responsibilities
- Rules and expectations
- Progress checkpoints
- Exit plan

Both sign it.

This prevents:

- Misunderstandings
- Mission creep (temporary becomes permanent)
- Resentment
- Unclear expectations

What If They Don't Follow the Agreement?

If they're not meeting expectations:

1. Address it promptly "We agreed you'd pay \$X by the 1st. It's the 10th. What's going on?"

2. Restate expectations "The agreement was X. We need to stick to that."

3. Problem-solve if appropriate "If something's changed, let's talk about adjustments. But we need to agree."

4. Set consequences "If you can't meet these expectations, we'll need to revise the arrangement, including possibly your moving out."

5. Follow through If they continue not meeting expectations, they need to move out.

Don't: Let them stay indefinitely with no accountability.

The Emotional Challenge

This is hard because:

- It feels unloving to charge rent or set boundaries
- You want to help
- You feel guilty
- They're your child

But remember:

- Boundaries are loving
- Enabling is not helping
- Creating accountability promotes growth
- They're your adult child (emphasis on adult)

You're not rejecting them. You're treating them like adults and helping them develop into fully functioning adults.

Maintaining Relationship Without Enmeshment After They Leave

Once they're out of your home and living independently, the challenge is maintaining a healthy relationship without co-dependent enmeshment.

What Healthy Adult Relationships with Children Look Like

Characteristics:

1. Contact is mutual, not one-sided You reach out to them sometimes; they reach out to you sometimes. It's not just you constantly initiating.

2. Boundaries are respected They have boundaries; you have boundaries. Both are respected.

3. Advice is given only when asked You don't offer unsolicited advice about their life choices.

4. Their life choices are theirs You don't try to manage, control, or dictate their life.

5. Relationship is based on choice, not obligation They spend time with you because they want to, not because they're guilted into it.

6. You have your own life Your life doesn't revolve around them. You have your own interests, relationships, and activities.

7. Conversations include both your lives You share about your life; they share about theirs. It's not just you asking about them or them using you for advice.

8. Problems are theirs to solve When they have problems, you're emotionally supportive but not solving them.

9. Financial boundaries are clear If you help financially, it's with clear boundaries and expectations.

10. You trust God with them You're able to release them to God's care, not trying to be God in their lives.

Signs of Enmeshment with Adult Children

Warning signs:

1. You can't function when they're upset Their emotions determine your emotions.

2. You're making their problems your problems You're trying to fix/manage their life.

3. You're tracking/monitoring their life Constantly checking location, social media, what they're doing.

4. They can't make decisions without you They call for every decision or you insert yourself into every decision.

5. You're financially supporting them without boundaries Constantly bailing them out, paying for things, with no plan or accountability.

- 6. You feel responsible for their happiness** If they're unhappy, you feel you need to fix it.
- 7. You're living through them** Their achievements are your achievements; their life is your life.
- 8. They're your primary emotional support** You use them as your confidant, therapist, or best friend.
- 9. You can't tolerate distance** You need constant contact and get anxious when you don't hear from them.
- 10. You make their spouse/partner the enemy** Anyone who "takes them away from you" is a threat.

Creating Healthy Distance

If you're enmeshed, work toward:

- 1. Developing your own life** Hobbies, friends, interests, activities that don't involve them.
- 2. Decreasing contact to appropriate levels** Not daily calls/texts unless mutually desired. Maybe weekly check-ins.
- 3. Stopping unsolicited advice** Only give advice when asked.
- 4. Setting financial boundaries** Clear expectations around any financial help.
- 5. Releasing emotional responsibility** Their emotions are theirs. Your emotions are yours.
- 6. Trusting them to manage their life** Stop trying to fix, manage, or control.
- 7. Praying instead of managing** When you want to intervene, pray instead.
- 8. Building adult friendships** Get your emotional needs met by age-appropriate relationships.
- 9. Focusing on your marriage** (if applicable) Make your spouse your primary relationship again.

10. Therapy Get help processing the transition and developing healthy patterns.

When They Get Married

Marriage is a MAJOR transition:

"For this reason a man shall leave his father and his mother, and be joined to his wife; and they shall become one flesh."

Their spouse is now their primary relationship. Not you.

This means:

- 1. You're no longer the first call** Their spouse is. This is healthy and right.
- 2. They make decisions with their spouse, not you** Major life decisions are between them and their spouse.
- 3. Holidays/time may be divided** They have two families to consider now. You may not get all the holidays/time you used to have.
- 4. Their loyalty is to their spouse first** As it should be.
- 5. You don't get to be in the middle of their marriage** Don't let them complain to you about their spouse. Don't give advice about their marriage unless asked. Don't interfere.
- 6. Boundaries become more important** Your relationship with them changes. Respect the boundaries they set.

This is GOOD. This is HEALTHY. This is GOD'S DESIGN.

If you can't handle this transition, the problem is you, not them.

Trusting God With Their Story—Even When You Disagree With Their Choices

This might be the hardest part: what do you do when your adult children make choices you disagree with?

The Reality

Your adult children will:

- Make choices you wouldn't make
- Sometimes make foolish choices
- Sometimes make sinful choices
- Sometimes reject your faith
- Sometimes reject your values
- Live lives that look different than you hoped

This is reality for most parents.

The Parable of the Prodigal Son

Let's look at Luke 15:11-32:

"The younger of them said to his father, 'Father, give me the share of the estate that falls to me.' So he divided his wealth between them. And not many days later, the younger son gathered everything together and went on a journey into a distant country, and there he squandered his estate with loose living."

—Luke 15:12-13 (NASB)

Notice what the father did:

- **Gave the son his inheritance** (even though he knew it was a bad idea)
- **Let him leave** (didn't try to stop him or control him)
- **Didn't follow him** (didn't try to manage from a distance)
- **Didn't rescue him** (let him experience consequences)
- **Waited** (didn't force reconciliation)

Notice what the father DIDN'T do:

- Argue with the son about his decision
- Refuse to give him the inheritance to control him

- Follow him to manage his life
- Bail him out when he was suffering
- Force him to come home
- Cut him off completely

The father let him go. The father let him fail. The father waited.

And when the son came home:

"But while he was still a long way off, his father saw him and felt compassion for him, and ran and embraced him and kissed him."

—Luke 15:20 (NASB)

The father:

- Watched for him (never gave up hope)
- Ran to him (eager to welcome him)
- Embraced him (received him with love)
- Celebrated his return

This is the model for loving your adult children through their choices.

What Trusting God Looks Like

When your adult child makes choices you disagree with:

1. Acknowledge your feelings You're disappointed, scared, angry, sad. These feelings are valid.

2. Recognize your limits You cannot control their choices. You cannot force them to choose differently. You are not God.

3. Trust God's sovereignty *"For I know the plans that I have for you," declares the Lord, 'plans for welfare and not for calamity to give you a future and a hope.'*

—Jeremiah 29:11 (NASB)

God has a plan for them. It's not your plan. Trust His plan.

4. Release them to God's care Literally pray a prayer of release: "God, I release [name] to Your care. I cannot control their life. I cannot save them. But You can. I trust You with their story."

5. Continue loving them Love is not conditional on agreement. You can love them without agreeing with their choices.

6. Set appropriate boundaries Loving them doesn't mean accepting harmful behavior toward you. Set boundaries.

7. Keep the door open Like the prodigal's father, watch for their return. Never close the door completely.

8. Pray This becomes your primary work. Pray for them. Pray for their situation. Pray for wisdom for yourself.

9. Wait Sometimes all you can do is wait, pray, and remain available.

10. Trust the journey God is working even when you can't see it. Trust the process.

What About When They Reject Your Faith?

This is perhaps the hardest:

Your adult child rejects Christianity. Rejects the faith you raised them in. Lives in ways contrary to biblical values.

What do you do?

1. Grieve This is a loss. It's okay to grieve it.

2. Remember their relationship with God is theirs, not yours You cannot believe for them. You cannot force faith.

3. Continue modeling your faith Live your faith authentically. Don't preach, just live it.

- 4. Keep the relationship** Don't cut them off because they don't share your faith. Jesus didn't cut off sinners.
- 5. Respect their autonomy** They're adults. They get to choose their beliefs.
- 6. Pray without ceasing** This is your most powerful tool.
- 7. Trust God's timing** The prodigal came home. God's timing is not always our timing.
- 8. Don't make every conversation about faith** If every interaction is you trying to convert them, they'll avoid you.
- 9. Love them unconditionally** Just as God loves you unconditionally.
- 10. Hold onto hope** God is not done with their story.

Specific Scenarios

If they're living with a partner unmarried: "I disagree with this choice. I believe God's design is marriage first. But you're adults, and this is your decision. I love you both. You're welcome in our home, but we do ask [specific boundaries, like separate rooms]."

If they're in a same-sex relationship: "I hold to traditional biblical teaching on marriage. I know you see this differently. I love you, and I'm not cutting you off. But I need you to understand where I stand. Can we navigate this with love and respect for our differences?"

If they're in addiction: "I love you, but I won't enable your addiction. I'll support your recovery, but I won't support active addiction. Here are my boundaries. I'm always here when you're ready for help."

If they've left the faith: "I'm sad about this. I believe differently, and I'll continue to pray for you. But you're my child, and I love you. Our relationship doesn't depend on you sharing my faith. I'm here."

Financial Boundaries with Adult Children

Money is a major issue in parent-adult child relationships. Clear boundaries are essential.

The Co-Dependent Trap

Co-dependent parents often:

- Continue fully financially supporting adult children
- Bail them out repeatedly
- Pay for things adult children should pay for themselves
- Use money to control
- Use money to stay involved/needed

This creates:

- Dependence
- Resentment (on both sides)
- Lack of growth
- Unclear expectations
- Power dynamics

Healthy Financial Boundaries

Principles:

1. Adult children should support themselves Default expectation: they pay their own bills, fund their own life.

2. Help should be strategic, not perpetual Occasional help is fine. Constant support creates dependence.

3. Clear expectations If you help, both parties understand the terms.

4. No rescuing Don't bail them out of consequences of their poor choices.

5. Gifts vs. loans vs. expectations Be clear: Is this a gift? A loan (with repayment expectations)? An investment with expectations?

Scenarios

College: Decide in advance:

- What will you pay for?
- What are they responsible for?
- What are the conditions? (grades, behavior, etc.)
- What happens if conditions aren't met?

Post-college transition: Reasonable: Helping with first apartment deposit or initial setup **Unreasonable:** Paying all their bills while they "find themselves"

Emergency situations: Reasonable: Helping with a genuine emergency (medical, job loss, etc.) with a plan **Unreasonable:** Constantly bailing them out of preventable crises

Weddings: Decide: How much (if anything) will you contribute? What are you willing to pay for? **Set limit and stick to it.** Don't let them pressure you into more.

Grandchildren: Decide: Will you help financially with grandchildren? How much? Under what circumstances? **Don't let them expect you to fund their children.**

Down payment on house: If you choose to help:

- Clear on amount
- Clear on whether gift or loan
- Clear on expectations
- Clear on one-time vs. ongoing

When to Say No

Say no when:

- 1. It enables poor choices** They're being financially irresponsible; bailing them out prevents learning.
- 2. It's beyond your means** Don't sacrifice your retirement/finances to fund their lifestyle.
- 3. There's no plan or progress** They want money but have no plan for change.
- 4. It creates resentment** If helping would create resentment in you or your spouse, don't do it.
- 5. They're adult and capable** They can work, earn, and pay for themselves.
- 6. It's a pattern** If you're constantly helping, you're enabling, not helping.

How to Say No

"I love you, but I'm not going to help financially with this. Here's why: [reason]. I believe you can figure this out. I'm here for emotional support, but not financial support in this situation."

Then hold the boundary.

Prayer Strategies for Adult Children

When you can't control, you can pray. This becomes your primary work.

What Prayer Does

Prayer:

- Releases you from trying to control
- Invites God into the situation
- Reminds you that God is sovereign
- Gives you peace
- Changes you (even if it doesn't immediately change them)
- Acknowledges your dependence on God

Prayer is not:

- A last resort (it should be first)
- Manipulation ("God, make them do what I want")
- Abdication (you still parent appropriately; you just don't try to be God)

How to Pray

1. Pray for their relationship with God

- That they would know and love God
- That they would walk in faith
- That they would pursue righteousness
- That God would draw them to Himself

2. Pray for their character

- Integrity
- Wisdom
- Compassion
- Self-control
- Perseverance
- Humility

3. Pray for their relationships

- That they would have godly friends
- That they would choose a godly spouse (or that their spouse would grow in faith)
- That their relationships would be healthy
- That they would love others well

4. Pray for their work/calling

- That they would find meaningful work
- That they would work with integrity
- That they would use their gifts
- That they would find their calling

5. Pray for their specific struggles

- Name the struggles specifically
- Ask God to intervene
- Pray for their freedom, healing, growth

6. Pray for wisdom for yourself

- How to love them well
- What to say/not say
- When to step in/step back
- How to set boundaries

7. Pray prayers of release "God, I release [name] to You. I cannot control their life. I trust You with their story. Help me let go."

8. Pray Scripture over them Use biblical prayers:

- Ephesians 1:17-19 (wisdom and revelation)
- Ephesians 3:16-19 (rooted in love)
- Philippians 1:9-11 (love and discernment)
- Colossians 1:9-12 (wisdom and knowledge)

Practical Prayer Strategies

1. Daily prayer time Set aside time daily to pray specifically for your children.

2. Prayer journal Write prayers for them. Record how God answers.

3. Scripture cards Write Scripture on cards and pray those verses over them.

4. Prayer with spouse/friends Pray together with others who care about your children.

5. Fasting For serious situations, consider fasting and prayer.

6. Prayer instead of nagging When you want to call and fix/manage, pray instead.

7. Persistent prayer Keep praying even when you don't see results.

"Pray without ceasing."

—1 Thessalonians 5:17 (NASB)

The Launch Conversation Template

At some point (ideally before or at launch), have this conversation:

The Conversation

"[Child's name], you're [launching to college/moving out/entering adulthood]. I want to talk about what this transition means for our relationship.

For your whole life, I've been the authority. I've made decisions for you, managed your life, and guided you. That was appropriate when you were a child. But now, you're becoming an adult [or: you are an adult]. And that changes things.

From this point forward, I'm no longer the decision-maker in your life. You are. I'm not going to tell you what to do, manage your schedule, or control your choices. Those are your decisions now.

That doesn't mean I don't care or that I'm not here for you. It means I trust that I've prepared you for this, and now I need to let you actually live it. I'm transitioning from being your authority to being your advisor—someone you can come to for perspective if you want it, but whose advice you're free to take or leave.

I want you to know:

1. I believe in you. I believe you have the wisdom, character, and capability to navigate adult life.

2. I'm here if you need me. If you want advice, perspective, or support, I'm always available. But I'm going to wait for you to ask rather than inserting myself.

3. I'm going to make mistakes in this transition. I might offer unsolicited advice sometimes. I might overstep. If I do, please tell me. I'm learning too.

4. Our relationship will change, but it doesn't end. We're moving from parent-child to adult-adult. I'm excited about that transition, even though it's hard.

5. I love you unconditionally. No matter what choices you make, no matter where your life goes, no matter whether you succeed or struggle—I love you. Nothing will change that.

6. I'm trusting God with your story. I don't know what your future holds. But I know God loves you, has a plan for you, and is with you. I'm choosing to trust Him with your journey.

Do you have any questions or things you want to talk about regarding this transition?"

[Listen. Dialogue. Clarify. Reassure.]

"Okay. I'm proud of you. I'm excited for what's ahead. And I'm here whenever you need me. I love you."

The Freedom of Release

Let me end with a vision of what's possible when you successfully launch your children.

What Release Looks Like

For them:

- Freedom to write their own story
- Confidence in their capability
- Healthy adult independence
- Relationship with you based on choice, not need
- Space to make mistakes and learn
- Trust that you believe in them
- Ability to pursue God's calling without your control

For you:

- Freedom from constant worry about their choices
- Peace that you prepared them well
- Pride in their capability
- Relationship based on mutual choice and love
- Space to enter your next life stage
- Trust in God's sovereignty over their lives
- Joy in watching their story unfold

For your relationship:

- Adult friendship alongside parent-child history
- Mutual respect
- Appropriate boundaries
- Genuine connection not based on dependency
- Richer, deeper relationship over time
- Legacy of faith and character

- Generational blessing

The Long-Term Vision

20 years from now:

Your children are thriving adults. They've made mistakes and learned from them. They've faced challenges and grown stronger. They've pursued their own paths, made their own choices, written their own stories.

And you? You've transitioned to the next stage of life. You have your own interests, relationships, activities. You and your children have a rich relationship—you see each other, talk regularly, enjoy each other's company. But their lives don't revolve around you, and yours doesn't revolve around them.

They call you sometimes for advice. Sometimes just to chat. They include you in their lives because they want to, not because they have to. And when you're together, you're not managing them or fixing their problems—you're just enjoying being together.

You look back and realize: **You did your job. You launched them well. You gave them wings, not chains. You released them into their own God-written stories.**

And that was always the goal.

"Train up a child in the way he should go, even when he is old he will not depart from it."

—Proverbs 22:6 (NASB)

You trained them. You equipped them. You released them.

Now you trust God with their story.

This is success.

Chapter Summary: Key Takeaways

You've learned:

- Success is measured by their freedom and capability, not your continued involvement
- The goal of parenting is to work yourself out of a job
- At 18+, you transition from authority to advisor—they make their own decisions
- Adult children living at home need clear boundaries, timeline, and expectations
- Maintain relationship without enmeshment after they launch
- Trust God with their story, even when they make choices you disagree with
- The prodigal son shows how to love through difficult choices
- Financial boundaries with adult children prevent enabling
- Prayer becomes your primary work when you can't control

Remember: The goal of parenting is to release them into their own God-given story—not to write the story for them. Your job is to prepare them for the path, then trust God to walk it with them.

Action Steps This Week:

1. If you have adult children: Evaluate whether you're in advisor role or still trying to control
2. If you have younger children: Start preparing now for launch by gradually releasing
3. Pray a prayer of release over each of your children
4. If adult children are living at home: Create or revisit the written agreement

5. Identify one area where you need to trust God with their story instead of trying to control it
-

Reflection Questions:

1. How do you measure success in parenting? By their independence or your continued involvement?
 2. If your children are adults: Are you in advisor role, or are you still trying to control? What needs to change?
 3. Can you trust God with your children's stories, even when they make choices you disagree with? What makes this hard?
 4. If adult children are living with you: Do you have clear boundaries? Are they progressing toward independence?
 5. How does the parable of the prodigal son challenge your approach to your children's choices?
 6. What would it look like to release your children to God's care? What's holding you back?
-

Prayer for Releasing Your Children:

Father, this is so hard. Everything in me wants to hold on, to control, to manage their lives. But I know that's not my job. My job was to prepare them. Now my job is to release them into Your care. Help me let go. Help me trust You with their stories—even when they make choices I wouldn't make, even when they walk paths I wouldn't choose, even when they struggle and I can't fix it. Give me peace that I've done my job. Help me transition from authority to advisor. Help me love them unconditionally without enabling them. Help me set healthy boundaries while keeping the door open. Help me pray for them without trying to control them. When they make choices that break my heart, remind me of how often my choices have broken Yours—and yet You continue

to love me. Teach me to love them the way You love me: unconditionally, faithfully, patiently. Help me trust that You have good plans for them. Help me trust that You love them even more than I do. Help me trust that You're writing their stories, and Your authorship is better than mine could ever be. Give them wisdom, character, faith, and resilience. Protect them from true harm. Draw them to Yourself. And help me rest in Your sovereignty over their lives. They are Yours, Lord. They've always been Yours. Help me remember that. In Jesus' name, Amen.

"Trust in the Lord with all your heart and do not lean on your own understanding. In all your ways acknowledge Him, and He will make your paths straight."

—Proverbs 3:5-6 (NASB)

"'For I know the plans that I have for you,' declares the Lord, 'plans for welfare and not for calamity to give you a future and a hope.'"

—Jeremiah 29:11 (NASB)

"For this reason a man shall leave his father and his mother, and be joined to his wife; and they shall become one flesh."

—Genesis 2:24 (NASB)

EPILOGUE

Freedom Multiplied: Watching Your Children Soar

"I have no greater joy than this, to hear of my children walking in the truth."
—3 John 1:4 (NASB)

Five years ago, Rebecca sat in a counselor's office, crying as she realized the truth: she'd been parenting from co-dependency, not from love. She'd made her children responsible for her emotions. She'd controlled them out of anxiety. She'd needed them to need her.

The work ahead had seemed overwhelming. How do you change patterns you've practiced for years? How do you rebuild relationships you've damaged? How do you release control you've held so tightly?

But she'd started. One small change at a time. One apology. One boundary. One moment of stepping back instead of stepping in. One prayer of release. One conversation where she bit her tongue instead of offering unsolicited advice.

It was hard. She messed up frequently. She had to apologize often. She had moments of doubt: *Am I doing the right thing? What if they need me and I'm not there?*

But slowly, things changed.

Her teenage daughter stopped looking anxious every time Rebecca entered a room. Her son started making decisions on his own. Her adult daughter called not because she had to, but because she wanted to. The tense, enmeshed atmosphere in their home gradually shifted to something lighter, freer, healthier.

Now, five years later, Rebecca watches her daughter—the one who had been so anxious, so unable to make decisions, so responsible for Rebecca's emotions—preparing to move across the country for graduate school.

"Mom, are you okay with this?" her daughter asks. "I know it's far."

Rebecca takes a breath. The old Rebecca would have said, "What will I do without you? How will I manage? Can't you find something closer?" The old Rebecca would have made it about her needs, her feelings, her loss.

But the new Rebecca—the one who's been working on this for five years—says something different:

"I'm going to miss you. I really am. But I'm so excited for you. This is an amazing opportunity, and you're ready for it. I'm so proud of the woman you've become. Go live your life. I'll be here cheering you on."

Her daughter's eyes fill with tears. "Thank you for letting me go. Thank you for believing in me. Thank you for changing."

Later that night, Rebecca journals: *"I watched her face when I told her I was proud of her, that I believed in her, that she should go. She looked... free. Not burdened. Not guilty. Not responsible for my happiness. Just free. And seeing her free makes me free too. This is what it was supposed to be all along."*

If you've made it this far in this book, you've done hard work. You've looked at painful truths about yourself. You've examined patterns you'd rather not see. You've confronted ways you've hurt your children even while trying to love them.

This epilogue is your celebration. It's your reminder of why this work matters. It's your vision of what's possible when you choose freedom over enmeshment, boundaries over control, trust over anxiety.

The Joy of Watching Children Walk in Freedom You Didn't Have

Maybe you didn't have healthy parenting modeled for you. Maybe your parents were co-dependent with you, or controlling, or emotionally enmeshed. Maybe you grew up feeling responsible for your parents' emotions, unable to set boundaries, anxious about disappointing them.

And now? Now you're breaking that pattern. Now you're parenting differently.

The joy is this: your children get to have what you didn't have.

What Freedom Looks Like

When you parent from health instead of co-dependency, your children experience:

Freedom to be themselves Not extensions of you. Not mini-versions of you. Not living your unlived dreams. Just... themselves.

They explore their own interests. They develop their own personalities. They discover who God made them to be. And you celebrate that, even when they're different from you.

Freedom to fail They make mistakes—and they survive them. They face consequences—and they learn from them. They fall—and they get back up.

Because you're not rescuing them from every failure, they develop resilience. They learn that failure isn't fatal. They discover they're capable of handling difficulty.

Freedom to have their own emotions They're sad—and they're allowed to be sad without you trying to fix it. They're angry—and they're allowed to be angry without you taking it personally. They're happy—and their happiness isn't dependent on your mood.

They learn that emotions are information, not emergencies. They develop emotional regulation. They discover they can feel their feelings and be okay.

Freedom to set boundaries They can say "no" to you. They can have privacy. They can have relationships you're not part of. They can have parts of their life that are just theirs.

And instead of this threatening you, you celebrate it as evidence of their healthy development.

Freedom to make their own choices As they mature, they make increasing numbers of their own decisions. And you trust them. You guide when asked, but you don't control.

They learn to think critically, weigh options, consider consequences, and make wise choices. Because you've let them practice.

Freedom from your anxiety Your worry doesn't become their responsibility. Your fear doesn't determine their opportunities. Your need for control doesn't limit their growth.

They learn that the world is manageable, not terrifying. They develop appropriate confidence. They take healthy risks.

Freedom to have an adult relationship with you When they grow up, they don't flee from you—they choose relationship with you. They call because they want to, not because they're obligated. They include you because they enjoy your company, not because they feel guilty.

You have a rich, adult relationship built on mutual respect, not on dependency.

The Contrast

Think about what they DON'T experience because you've chosen health:

They don't spend their lives trying to please you. They don't feel responsible for your happiness. They don't sacrifice their own needs for yours. They don't struggle with boundaries in all their relationships. They don't carry inappropriate guilt. They don't live in fear of disappointing you. They don't stay enmeshed with you into their adulthood.

Because you did the hard work, they don't have to carry what you carried.

Generational Healing

There's profound joy in this: **You're healing not just yourself, but your family line.**

The co-dependency that may have been passed down for generations—it stops with you. You're breaking the cycle. Your children get to parent from a healthier place because you showed them how. Their children will benefit from your hard work.

You're not just changing your family. You're changing your family line.

Celebrating the Small Victories Along the Way

Breaking co-dependent patterns doesn't happen overnight. It's not one dramatic moment of change. It's thousands of small victories over months and years.

What Small Victories Look Like

The day you:

- Felt the urge to rescue but didn't
- Let natural consequences teach the lesson
- Bit your tongue instead of offering unsolicited advice
- Set a boundary and held it
- Said "no" without feeling guilty
- Let your child struggle without fixing it
- Managed your own anxiety instead of controlling your child
- Apologized for overstepping
- Caught yourself mid-rescue and stopped
- Prayed instead of meddling
- Celebrated their independence instead of feeling threatened
- Allowed them to be angry with you without defending yourself
- Trusted God with their story
- Chose your spouse over your child (in healthy ways)

- Let them fail and watched them recover
- Gave them space when you wanted to hover
- Received their boundary without taking it personally
- Watched them thrive without you and celebrated it

Each of these moments is a victory.

Don't wait for perfection to celebrate. Don't dismiss these small wins. Each one is evidence of growth, change, and healing.

Progress, Not Perfection

You will still mess up. You'll still have moments where you:

- Over-function
- Rescue when you shouldn't
- Give unsolicited advice
- Let your anxiety drive your parenting
- Overstep boundaries
- Make it about you instead of about them

That's okay. That's normal. That's part of growth.

What matters is:

- You're aware of it more quickly
- You apologize more readily
- You course-correct faster
- The overall trajectory is toward health
- You're doing better than you were a year ago

You're not aiming for perfect. You're aiming for better.

Celebrating Their Victories Too

As you change, your children change too. Celebrate when you see:

Evidence they're developing independence:

- Making decisions without you
- Solving problems on their own
- Handling conflict independently
- Managing their lives competently

Evidence they're developing resilience:

- Recovering from setbacks
- Learning from mistakes
- Persevering through difficulty
- Bouncing back from disappointment

Evidence they're developing healthy boundaries:

- Saying "no" appropriately
- Setting limits with others
- Having privacy
- Maintaining appropriate relationships

Evidence they're developing their own identity:

- Pursuing their own interests
- Expressing their own opinions
- Making choices different from yours
- Becoming who God made them to be

Every one of these is cause for celebration. These are the fruits of your hard work.

You're Not Just Changing Your Family—You're Changing Your Family Line

Let's zoom out and look at the bigger picture.

The Generational Impact

When you break co-dependent patterns, you impact:

Your children: They parent from health instead of from co-dependency. They have healthier marriages. They raise their children with appropriate boundaries. They don't repeat the patterns you broke.

Your grandchildren: They grow up in healthier families. They don't carry the burden of co-dependent relationships. They have models of healthy family dynamics.

Future generations: The ripple effect continues. Generation after generation benefits from your decision to do the hard work of change.

Your extended family: Your siblings, your parents, your cousins—they see something different in your family. Some may be inspired to examine their own patterns.

Your community: Healthy families create healthy communities. Your children will enter workplaces, churches, neighborhoods as healthier people who create healthier relationships.

The Scriptural Vision

"We will not conceal them from their children, but tell to the generation to come the praises of the Lord, and His strength and His wondrous works that He has done. For He established a testimony in Jacob and appointed a law in Israel, which He commanded our fathers that they should teach them to their children, that the generation to come might know, even the children yet to be born, that they may arise and tell them to their children, that they should put their confidence in God and not forget the works of God, but keep His

commandments."

—*Psalm 78:4-7 (NASB)*

You're establishing something in your family line:

- A testimony of God's healing power
- A pattern of healthy relationships
- A legacy of freedom
- A foundation of trust in God instead of control

You're teaching your children:

- To trust God, not anxiety
- To give freedom, not control
- To set boundaries, not enmesh
- To love well, not need desperately

And they will teach their children. And their children will teach their children.

This is generational impact.

What You're Passing Down

Instead of passing down:

- Co-dependency
- Enmeshment
- Anxiety-driven parenting
- Controlling behaviors
- Lack of boundaries
- Emotional fusion
- People-pleasing

- Inability to individuate

You're passing down:

- Healthy relationships
- Appropriate boundaries
- Trust in God
- Emotional regulation
- Resilience
- Independence
- Healthy interdependence
- Freedom to be oneself

This is your legacy.

The Legacy of Freedom for Generations to Come

Imagine your great-great-grandchildren—people you'll never meet, living decades from now.

They will benefit from the work you're doing today.

They won't know your name for this work. They won't know you went to therapy, read books, did the hard internal work of breaking co-dependent patterns. They won't know you cried, struggled, apologized, and tried again.

But they will benefit.

They'll grow up in families where:

- People have healthy boundaries
- Children are free to be themselves
- Parents trust God instead of controlling
- Relationships are based on freedom, not need

- Love is expressed in healthy ways
- Independence is celebrated

And they'll think this is normal.

Because for them, it will be. Because you broke the cycle. Because you chose freedom over control. Because you did the hard work so future generations wouldn't have to.

The Eternal Impact

But there's more than just familial impact. There's eternal impact.

When you raise children in freedom:

- They're better able to understand God's love (not based on performance or control)
- They're better able to trust God (they've learned to trust appropriate authority)
- They're better able to have healthy relationships with God and others
- They're better able to serve God freely (not from obligation or fear)

You're not just changing family patterns. You're helping shape their relationship with God.

A child raised by co-dependent parents often struggles to understand God's love—they think it's conditional, performance-based, controlling.

A child raised by healthy parents who broke co-dependent patterns can better grasp:

- God's unconditional love
- God's appropriate boundaries
- God's sovereignty (He controls, we don't)
- The balance of relationship and freedom

This has eternal implications.

Your Place in God's Story

You are part of a bigger story God is writing.

He's redeeming not just you, but your family line. He's bringing healing to generations. He's using your obedience to create ripples that will extend far beyond your life.

You may never see the full impact of your work.

You might not see your children's children parenting healthily. You might not see the faith that continues for generations. You might not see all the ways your hard work multiplies.

But God sees it. And He's pleased.

"Well done, good and faithful servant."

—Matthew 25:21 (NASB)

You've been faithful with what He entrusted to you. You've done the hard work of healing, changing, growing. You've broken patterns that hurt, established patterns that heal.

This is good and faithful work.

The Joy Ahead

Let me paint you a picture of what's ahead.

Ten Years From Now

Your children are adults (or well on their way). You look at them and see:

Capable people They're handling life. They're making decisions. They're solving problems. They're functioning well in the world.

And you realize: *I prepared them for this.*

Healthy relationships They have friendships, romantic relationships, work relationships that are healthy. They set boundaries. They communicate directly. They don't people-please or enmesh.

And you realize: *They learned this from watching me change.*

Resilience They've faced setbacks and bounced back. They've made mistakes and learned. They've experienced failure and gotten back up.

And you realize: *Allowing consequences taught them this.*

Faith They have their own relationship with God. They're pursuing Him in their own way. They're asking their own questions, developing their own theology, walking their own faith journey.

And you realize: *I pointed them to Him, but He drew them to Himself.*

Freedom They're living their own stories. Making their own choices. Pursuing their own callings. Being who God made them to be.

And you realize: *This is what I wanted all along.*

Your Relationship

Ten years from now, your relationship with your children looks like:

Adult friendship alongside parent-child history You have conversations as adults. You enjoy each other's company. You share life together. The parent-child dynamic is still there, but it's enriched by adult relationship.

Mutual respect They respect you. You respect them. Neither is trying to control the other. Both value the other's perspective.

Healthy boundaries You have your life; they have theirs. You're involved appropriately, not enmeshed. You respect their boundaries; they respect yours.

Chosen connection They call you because they want to, not because they have to. They include you because they enjoy you, not because they're obligated. They want you in their lives.

Rich history You can look back together and see the growth. You've apologized for mistakes. They've forgiven. You've rebuilt trust. The relationship is deeper because you've done repair work.

Your Life

Ten years from now, your life looks like:

Freedom from anxiety You're not constantly worried about them. You trust God with their stories. You sleep at night because you've released them to His care.

Your own identity Being their parent is part of who you are, but not all of who you are. You have your own interests, relationships, activities, callings.

Healthy marriage (if applicable) Your spouse is your primary relationship again. You've rebuilt what you neglected. You're partners in this next season.

Peace You're not driven by the need to control, fix, manage, or rescue. You've learned to sit with the discomfort of not being able to control outcomes. You've found peace in God's sovereignty.

Joy You experience the joy of watching them thrive. Of seeing them fly. Of knowing you prepared them well. Of trusting God with their journeys.

This is what's ahead. This is what you're working toward. This is the freedom on the other side of the hard work.

Where You Are Now

You might be at the beginning of this journey, just realizing you have co-dependent patterns. Or you might be well into the process, seeing progress but still struggling.

Wherever you are, hear this:

Keep going.

The work is hard. The growth is slow. The setbacks are discouraging. But the destination is worth it.

Your children are worth it.

They're worth the hard work of examining yourself. They're worth the discomfort of changing patterns. They're worth the effort of learning new ways.

You're worth it.

You're worth the freedom that comes from breaking these patterns. You're worth the peace that comes from releasing control. You're worth the joy that comes from healthy relationships.

Future generations are worth it.

The children and grandchildren you'll never meet are worth your faithfulness now. The family line that will benefit from your hard work is worth persevering.

Remember

You don't have to be perfect. You just have to be willing to grow.

You don't have to have all the answers. You just have to be humble enough to seek help.

You don't have to fix everything at once. You just have to take the next small step.

You don't have to do this alone. God is with you. Community is available. Help exists.

You will mess up. And you'll apologize, repair, and try again.

You're not ruining your children by having been co-dependent. You're helping them by recognizing it and changing.

It's not too late. Whether your children are 5 or 45, change is possible.

God is faithful. He will complete the work He started in you and in them.

The Promise

"For I am confident of this very thing, that He who began a good work in you will perfect it until the day of Christ Jesus."

—Philippians 1:6 (NASB)

God started this work in you. He opened your eyes to co-dependent patterns. He gave you the desire to change. He led you to resources, help, wisdom.

And He will complete it.

Not all at once. Not without struggle. Not perfectly. But He will continue to work in you, through you, and in your family.

Trust the process.

Trust Him with your children's stories. Trust Him with the generational impact. Trust Him with the legacy you're creating.

He is faithful.

A Word of Blessing

To you, parent who is doing this hard work:

I see you. I see you biting your tongue when you want to give advice. I see you stepping back when you want to rescue. I see you managing your anxiety instead of controlling your child. I see you apologizing when you mess up. I see you setting boundaries even when it's hard. I see you trusting God when you want to control. I see you doing the internal work in therapy. I see you praying instead of meddling. I see you celebrating their independence even when it scares you. I see you choosing their freedom over your comfort.

This is holy work.

This is faithful parenting.

This is love.

May you know in your bones:

- You're doing the right thing

- Your children will benefit
- God is pleased
- The hard work is worth it
- You're not alone
- Change is happening
- Freedom is multiplying
- Your faithfulness matters

May you experience:

- Peace that surpasses understanding
- Wisdom for each decision
- Strength for the journey
- Grace for your failures
- Joy in their growth
- Hope for the future
- Trust in God's sovereignty
- Freedom in your own heart

May your children:

- Walk in the freedom you're creating
- Develop into healthy, whole people
- Know God's love deeply
- Set healthy boundaries
- Have resilience and wisdom
- Live their own stories

- Call you blessed
- Pass on health to their children

May your family line:

- Experience healing from generations of dysfunction
- Walk in freedom for generations to come
- Know God's love and faithfulness
- Display His redemption
- Be a light to others
- Multiply the freedom you're creating

You are breaking chains. You are creating freedom. You are changing your family line.

Well done, good and faithful servant.

Closing Prayer for Parents and Children

Father,

We come to You at the end of this journey through this book, but at the beginning or middle of our journey of change. Thank You for opening our eyes to co-dependent patterns we didn't know we had. Thank You for loving us enough to show us where we've been hurting our children even while trying to love them.

This work is hard, Lord. Everything in us wants to control, rescue, manage, and hold tight. Our anxiety tells us we must be involved in everything. Our need to be needed tells us their independence threatens us. Our wounds from our own childhoods tell us we must parent differently—but then we overcorrect into different dysfunctions.

We need You.

Give us wisdom for every decision. Show us when to step in and when to step back. Help us know when to speak and when to be silent. Teach us to trust You with our children's stories instead of trying to write those stories ourselves.

When we want to rescue, help us step back and let consequences teach.

When we want to control, help us release and let them make their own choices.

When our anxiety rises, help us manage it instead of managing them.

When they're in pain, help us comfort without fixing.

When they make mistakes, help us guide without shaming.

When they're struggling, help us believe in them without rescuing them.

When they're succeeding, help us celebrate without making it about us.

When they're different from us, help us honor who You made them to be.

When they make choices we disagree with, help us love without enmeshment.

When they need space, help us give it without feeling rejected.

When they need us, help us be available without being intrusive.

Heal our wounds, Lord. The wounds from our own childhoods that drive our co-dependency. The places we were controlled, enmeshed, or burdened. The ways we learned unhealthy patterns. Heal us so we don't pass those wounds to our children.

Give us community. Surround us with people who can support us, encourage us, speak truth to us, and pray with us. Don't let us do this alone.

Give us hope. When the work feels overwhelming, when we mess up repeatedly, when progress is slow—remind us that You are faithful, that change is happening, that our faithfulness matters.

And now, Lord, we pray for our children:

We release them to You. We acknowledge that they are Yours, not ours. They've always been Yours. You love them infinitely more than we do. You have good plans for them. You're writing their stories.

We pray they would:

- *Know You deeply and love You fully*
- *Walk in freedom, not in bondage to our co-dependency*
- *Develop into healthy, whole, capable people*
- *Have resilience to handle life's challenges*
- *Make wise decisions*
- *Set healthy boundaries*
- *Have healthy relationships*
- *Pursue their callings*
- *Become who You created them to be*
- *Experience Your love, grace, and faithfulness*
- *One day parent their own children in health*

Protect them, Lord:

- *From the damage we've already done*
- *From the mistakes we'll still make*
- *From dangers we can't control*
- *From our anxiety becoming their anxiety*
- *From bearing burdens too heavy for them*
- *From feeling responsible for our happiness*

Heal them, Lord:

- *From ways we've enmeshed with them*

- *From ways we've controlled them*
- *From ways we've made them responsible for our emotions*
- *From ways we've burdened them with adult problems*
- *From ways we've prevented their growth*

Redeem our mistakes, Lord. Take the ways we've failed and use them for good. Let our apologies teach them humility. Let our growth teach them that change is possible. Let our imperfections teach them about grace.

We trust You with their stories—the chapters already written and the chapters yet to come. We trust You with their choices—the ones we agree with and the ones we don't. We trust You with their journeys—even through valleys we wish they didn't have to walk.

Give us faith to believe:

- *You are sovereign over their lives*
- *You love them perfectly*
- *You have good plans for them*
- *You're working even when we can't see it*
- *Our prayers matter*
- *Our faithfulness in change matters*
- *Freedom is multiplying*
- *Generations will benefit*

Help us rest in Your sovereignty. Help us rejoice in their freedom. Help us celebrate their growth. Help us trust Your goodness.

For parents whose children are young: Give them wisdom to break these patterns before deep damage is done. Give them hope that they're starting early. Give them consistency to continue this work.

For parents whose children are grown: Give them courage to apologize for past patterns. Give them wisdom to know when to speak and when to be silent. Give them peace that it's not too late. Give them joy as they watch adult children they release and trust You with.

For parents whose children are struggling: Give them supernatural peace. Help them resist the urge to rescue. Help them set healthy boundaries while keeping the door open. Help them pray without ceasing. Help them trust that You're not done writing their children's stories.

For parents whose children have walked away: Comfort their hearts. Give them hope that the prodigal can come home. Help them wait well. Help them keep the door open. Help them trust Your timing. Help them rest in Your love for their children.

For single parents doing this work alone: Provide for them. Surround them with support. Give them strength for the hard days. Remind them they're not alone—You're with them.

For parents in difficult marriages trying to break these patterns: Give them wisdom. Help them change what they can control—themselves. Give them peace about what they can't control. Protect their children.

We thank You, Father:

- *For Your patience with us*
- *For Your grace that covers our failures*
- *For Your power to change us*
- *For Your faithfulness to complete the work You've started*
- *For the freedom You're creating*
- *For the legacy we're building*
- *For the generations who will benefit*
- *For redemption, healing, and hope*

We entrust ourselves and our children to You—the Perfect Parent, the Good Shepherd, the Faithful Father.

In the name of Jesus, who breaks chains, brings freedom, and makes all things new,

Amen.

The Beginning

This is not the end. This is the beginning.

The beginning of freedom. The beginning of health. The beginning of a new legacy. The beginning of generations walking in wholeness.

Go forth in peace. Parent in freedom. Trust in God's sovereignty. Celebrate their growth. Watch them soar.

And know this: **Your faithfulness matters. Your hard work multiplies. Your children will be better for it. Future generations will benefit. God is pleased.**

*"I have no greater joy than this, to hear of my children walking in the truth."
—3 John 1:4 (NASB)*

May you experience this joy—the joy of watching your children walk in the truth, in freedom, in health, in wholeness.

May freedom multiply in your family for generations to come.

Amen.

"We will not conceal them from their children, but tell to the generation to come the praises of the Lord, and His strength and His wondrous works that He has done... that the generation to come might know, even the children yet to be born, that they may arise and tell them to their children, that they should

put their confidence in God."
—Psalm 78:4-7 (NASB)

THE END

To the reader: If this book has helped you, pass it on. Share it with a friend. Recommend it to someone who's struggling. Post about it. Talk about it. Because breaking co-dependent patterns shouldn't be done in isolation. We need community. We need each other. And somewhere, there's a parent who needs the message of this book as much as you did.

Let's create a movement of parents who choose freedom over control, trust over anxiety, boundaries over enmeshment. Let's raise a generation of children who know they're loved without being needed, who are free to be themselves, who trust God because they've learned to trust appropriate authority.

Let freedom multiply.